

EXPLORATION INTO THE GAP THEORY

"Or who shut in the sea with doors, When it burst forth and issued from the womb; When I made the clouds its garment, And thick darkness its swaddling band; When I fixed My limit for it, And set bars and doors; When I said, 'This far you may come, but no farther, And here your proud waves must stop!'" (Job 38:8-11)

"This is the history of the heavens and the earth when they were created, in the day that the LORD God made the earth and the heavens." (Gen 2:1,2,4)

by E. McGowan

EXPLORATION INTO THE GAP THEORY

HOME

What is the Gap Theory?	3
-------------------------------	---

CHAPTERS

1 The Gap Theory's Distortion of Language.....	7
2 Origin of the Devil	15
3 Devil in the Garden	19
4 Devil Cast to Earth	29
5 How Did Evil Develop?	39
6 Cosmology and the Age of the Earth	43
7 How is the Age of the Earth Measured?	50
8 Six Biblical Conundrums of the Gap Theory	57
9 History of the Gap Theory	65
10 The Gap Principle and Kabbalah Connection	71
11 Gap Creationism and the End Time.....	85
12 In the Beginning – a Young Earth Creation Narrative.....	95

CONCLUSIONS	102
-------------------	-----

WHAT IS THE GOSPEL?.....	111
--------------------------	-----

ABOUT	122
-------------	-----

RESOURCES	125
-----------------	-----

EXPLORATION INTO THE GAP THEORY

By E. McGowan

“In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth. And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters.” (Gen 1:1-2)

HOME PAGE

What is the Gap Theory?

SYNOPSIS: The gap theory is a form of old-age creationism, also known as gap creationism, ruin-reconstruction theory and Lucifer’s flood. It is the belief that an unknown period of time – usually billions of years – existed between the first two verses of the Bible (Genesis 1:1-2). During this time, according to the gap theory, Lucifer is said to have ruled the earth and was lord over one third of the angels. However, the devil and his angels eventually rebelled against God, and the earth was destroyed – either by God or Satan. (There is no consensus among gap creationists, because there are no Scriptures to explain it.) So the Lord had to begin all over again, “re-creating” not just the earth but the entire universe (as some gap creationists teach), which had also been turned into a confused and chaotic state during this battle of intergalactic proportions.

NOTE 1: If you have no knowledge of, and no interest in, the doctrine of the gap theory, and have landed on this website by accident, you may be interested to go straight to the **LAST DAYS** tab above (or click here: <https://www.gaptheory.net/last-days/>). On that page, I present a summary of what has been going on in the world since 2020 – the year that put Covid-19 on the map.

NOTE 2: The reader can navigate this website two ways: 1) By clicking the **Next Chapter** tab at the bottom of the page to be taken there directly. 2) By selecting any **Chapter** from the navigation menu at the top of the page.

Explaining the Gap Theory

Some gap-theory believing churches (in their literature) refer to **Genesis 1:1** as the “first creation” – also termed the “initial creation”, “original creation”, “previous creation” or “Genesis prologue”. (Refer ‘Creation or Evolution: Does It Really Matter What You Believe?’, United Church of God, booklet available to download online.) I have put these terms into quotation marks as they are not found in any Bible version anywhere.

According to this creation theory, the “initial beautiful creation” is fleetingly mentioned in Gen 1:1: “In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth”. By the next verse Gen 1:2, however, the earth is said to have become a devastated ruin, even though, as gap creationists admit, the Bible tells us absolutely nothing about either an “initial creation” or its apparent destruction. Rather, this teaching has been formulated on a handful of mysterious “clues” said to be embedded within the biblical text. As the above-mentioned church booklet states:

“In Genesis we do not see details of the awe-inspiring initial creation, the creation well before Adam and Eve about which angels sang for joy. And we do not read how that creation came to be in chaos – ‘without form and void’. The text, though, does offer clues.” (Refer to ‘Creation or Evolution’, p64.)

In accordance with this gap theory narrative, the “initial creation” was obliterated when Satan rebelled against his Creator (or in some versions, just the earth is destroyed). It was then re-created by God in six days. This “re-creation” – also termed “renovation” and “days of renewal” (also not found in the Bible) – is said to be described in Gen 1:2 to Gen 2:2.

One gap theory narrative claims it was God who destroyed the heavens and the earth after Satan’s rebellion, another claims it was Satan. But surely such a **massive** difference of opinion within this creation doctrine, as to **who** destroyed the earth and the heavens, cannot be glossed over as unimportant, because it presents serious theological dilemmas!

After all, if the devil was responsible – why did God allow him to destroy His beautiful creation? Did the devil have that level of power and authority, and, if so, why? And was God incapable of stopping him? On the other hand, if *God* was responsible, why did He not just remove the devil rather than obliterate His glorious physical domain.

Whatever... the earth is said to have been so thoroughly desecrated by this event that even the firmament – the very structure of the atmosphere of the earth, without which nothing can exist on the planet – had to be “re-created” (Gen 1:6). Meanwhile, Satan continued in his rebellious spirit, *to rule over the earth a second time after its claimed “renovation”*.

Gap creation believes this time period (between the “initial creation” and the “re-creation”) lasted billions of years, bringing Genesis into line with the age of the earth according to secular science (e.g. evolutionary geology and evolutionary cosmology). Gap creation does not, however, accept biological evolution.

There are a few gap creationists (I recently learned) who have no interest in the ancient age of the earth according to secular science. They say that the gap of time between the “initial creation” and the “days of renewal” is indeterminate, and could have been just a few years, or even days! (More on this in Chapter 10: ‘The Gap Principle and Kabbalah Connection’.) Either way, it makes no difference, as all the same biblical conundrums exist whatever amount of time the gap is said to represent, as suffering and death was already on the planet **before** original sin.

Satan – Ruler of the Earth?

Some gap creationists have a very sketchy view of the “original earth”, because, they say, “the Scriptures are silent on it”. Quite so! Others have embellished it considerably. (Refer, for example, to the book *The Incredible Human Potential* by Herbert W. Armstrong, and the numerous Church of God splinter groups today that still maintain his teachings.)

According to some gap creationists, soulless humans existed on the “original creation”. These beings were even capable of sailing ships and conducting trade negotiations. (Gap creationists enigmatically refer to Ps 104:30 and Eze 28:16 for support, as I explore in Chapter 8 ‘Six Biblical Conundrums of the Gap Theory’.)

However, at some point, during this time, Lucifer and his angels sinned and rebelled against their Creator, ascending into the heavenly realm to wage a war of monumental proportions. So fierce was this battle, it is said that destruction was brought upon the whole creation. God then threw the devil and his cohorts back down to the earth, where, in their fury, they devastated the planet, turning it into “chaos, confusion and a wasteland”, where all life ceased to exist. (Or maybe God himself did this in his anger is the other view.) Nevertheless, God allowed Satan to continue visiting Him in His heavenly realm (Job 1:6).

Some gap theorists say the “initial creation” was destroyed by a great battle in which space debris contributed to burning up the earth’s surface, so that it was engulfed in fire. Others say the earth was destroyed by water (described as “Lucifers flood”, another term not found in Scripture). This, they

reason, explains the fossil record and rock layer deposits we find today. As such, Noah's flood (which would have destroyed any delicate fossils remaining from any so called "initial creation") by necessity has to be interpreted by gap creationists as only a tranquil or local event. This, however, is in conflict with how Scripture describes it – global and catastrophic, breaking up the foundations of the deep, with water covering "all the high mountains under the whole heaven" (Gen 7:19). Not only that but in Noah's day "the waters receded from the earth continually" (Gen 8:3), a hugely erosive process that lasted about seven months across the whole face of the planet.

One thing is sure, there is no consensus on what happened, or who did what, where and when during the conjectured "gap". Perhaps the only thing all gap creationists agree on is that Lucifer was the ruler of the "initial earth", where he lived with one third of the angels. This backstory is all said to have happened in Genesis chapter 1, between verses 1 and 2, all on account of a different reading of five words in this chapter and a few hand-picked Scriptures taken out of context.

Two Different Histories of the Earth

There are many versions of this creation narrative, so for sake of clarity I will focus on the version I have had the most exposure to. That is the belief that after God "re-created" the devastated earth's surface, He created man who was given the opportunity to take over Satan's earthly rulership. However, the devil tempted man, who sinned and failed. Thus, Satan's reign over the planet has continued without a break, from the "initial creation" right through his rebellion and on into the "re-creation" – even persisting during the "re-creation" process – to today. That is why, it is said, Satan was already in the Garden to deceive Eve, because he was still the rightful ruler of the planet.

Whatever version of the gap theory people hold to, there is an almost universal agreement on two points:

- It is said that Satan's rebellion (as found in a number of Scriptures) *could not* have happened at any other time in the earth's history. This is because it would have taken the devil billions of years to sin and to entice all his angels to join him in his battle against God.
- It is also a creation narrative that fits with the ancient-earth conclusions of the secular scientific establishment, which are deemed unquestionable, unbiased and factual.

The problem with these points, however, is that the earth and everything in it belongs to God (Deut 10:14) – *not* Satan. And by attributing such awesome authority and power to the devil, gap creation brings with it a host of theological conundrums to fundamental Christian doctrines when properly thought through to their conclusions.

Also, secular science presents an entirely different history of the earth to that of the Bible, with the majority of scientists believing in the big bang. In this theory, the universe is said to have exploded into being (without cause) around 14 billion years ago, with the earth having evolved 10 billion years later. The vast amount of time that gap creationists (or any old-age creation theorists) have accepted has more in common with big bang theory than the Bible – in which God tells us he created the *earth first, then the universe*, and then all life on the planet, and he did it all by his command and in six literal days.

There is one other gap creation view I am aware of, which does not consider either of the above two points. It is called the gap principle and I investigate the history of this doctrine, and its fascinating connection to the modern-day gap theory, in Chapter 10, 'The Gap Principle and Kabbalah Connection'.

On this website, I explore a number of gap theory arguments over 12 CHAPTERS to see if there can be any truth in this creation narrative. These chapters follow a logical sequence; however they can be read independently. The CONCLUSIONS tab is a summary of my findings, and THE GOSPEL tab

shows the far-reaching effects of gap creationism (or, indeed, any old earth creation narrative) on the heart of the Christian message (when followed through consistently). At the end of this, I encourage the reader to weigh up the evidence and decide for themselves – can there be any truth in the doctrine of the gap theory or gap principle? In doing so, they will heed God's command:

“Be diligent to present yourself approved to God, a worker who does not need to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth.” (2 Tim 2:15)

“Thus says the Lord, ‘Heaven is My throne, And earth is My footstool. Where is the house that you will build Me? And where is the place of My rest? For all those things My hand has made, And all those things exist’”... (Is 66:1-2)

“For let not that man suppose that he will receive anything from the Lord; he is a double-minded man, unstable in all his ways.” (Jas 1:7-8)

CHAPTER 1

The Gap Theory’s Distortion of Language

SYNOPSIS: When did time begin? – The Sabbath day: a memorial to a re-creation? – God’s words can be equivocated (ie. they are subject to change in a covert manner)? – An inconsistent doctrine that demands ambiguity – Reason and logic are disregarded and confusion reigns.

In order for anyone to consider the gap theory as the true history of the earth, they must first accept that throughout the Bible – from Genesis to Revelation – the fundamental meaning of certain words can be altered with no explanation necessary. For example, the word “creation” must be interchangeable with “re-creation”, and the word “made” must be interchangeable with the word “re-made”. The problem, however, is that it is just not possible to swap the meanings of these words, in either the Hebrew or the Greek or indeed English, with consistency, because any attempt to do so would nullify, or turn into nonsense, other related Scriptures. Thus, any doctrine that follows this unstable path must be as sketchy and ambiguous in all its manifestations, which is what I document in this chapter.

(Note: In Chapter 8, ‘Six Biblical Conundrums of the Gap Theory’, I consider the gap creation arguments for the Hebrew words *bara*, *hayah*, *tohuw*, *bohuw*, and *asah*. In this chapter, I am only dealing with the basic logic of language restraints, and the need to accept the clarity and consistency present in God’s word as found in good Bible translations such as the KJV.)

Now let us look at the most obvious example. If we were to swap the word “creation” for “initial creation” and “re-creation”, and the word “made” for “re-made”, in Genesis 1 and 2 according with the doctrine of the gap theory, this is what we would read:

“In the beginning God created the “initial” heavens and the earth... Then God re-made two great lights: the greater light to rule the day, and the lesser light to rule the night. He re-made the stars also. ... Then God saw everything that He had re-made, and indeed it was very good. So the evening and the morning were the sixth day... Then God blessed the seventh day and sanctified it, because in it He rested from all His work which God had re-created and re-made.” (Gen 1:16, 31; Gen 2:3)

And if we work our way into the New Testament, and try to swap “created” with “re-created”, and “made” with “re-made”, once again we have another unbiblical distortion.

“But from the beginning of the re-creation God re-made them male and female.” (Mark 10:6)

No gap creationist would ever openly state this. That is why they read what the Bible says but privately attribute different meanings to some of the words and thus change the straightforward intent of the Scriptures. This practice of altering the meaning of words in the same context *inconsistently and at will* is an example of *equivocation*. Bible students who view the scriptures as their primary source of truth would recognise this as enough evidence to abandon any gap theory ideas.

Thus, understanding the true creation account is not a question of biblical scholarship (i.e. having a special understanding of Hebrew words), it is a matter of being consistent – not double minded – when reading and quoting the word of God. It is also a matter of believing exactly what God has told us without changing it to fit a man-made doctrine specifically designed to accommodate a modern secular worldview of an ancient earth.

Christ is the Word “the Logos” and we simply cannot change the words he has given us in an attempt to make sense of any doctrine that appeals to us and which we have adopted.

More importantly, it is a matter of FAITH. That is, having faith in the precise words God commanded Moses to write down when recording the Scriptures. And not just the **words**, the **accurate historical accounts** also, as illustrated in the Book of Numbers:

“These are the journeys of the children of Israel, who went out of the land of Egypt by their armies under the hand of Moses and Aaron. **Now Moses wrote down the starting points of their journeys at the command of the LORD.** And these are their journeys according to their starting points... (Num 33:1-2).

And before anyone uses the argument that we can’t rely on the accuracy of the Bibles we have today, there are two crucial points to consider.

1: If God is incapable of preserving his word throughout history, we have no assurance of anything in Scripture and our faith would be resting on shifting sand. Yet Jesus – the Word – stated, “Thy word is true **from the beginning**” (Ps 119:60), and that God’s people would be “sanctified” through truth (John 17:17), and Jesus would build his church on rock and it would not be overpowered (Matt 16:18).

2: Even though the last 140 years have witnessed the entry of many corruptions in modern Bible versions, we still have access to the Byzantine Majority Text manuscripts, which constitute 95 per cent of the most widely circulated New Testament manuscripts in existence today. (This is more historical evidence than any other ancient document on earth.) As for the Old Testament, all world-renowned Hebrew scholars today confirm that the Genesis creation account in the Masoretic text was written as a **continuous flowing narrative – with NO gap.** (Refer to Chapter 8, ‘Six Biblical Conundrums of the Gap Theory’.)

The Meaning of Equivocation

Here I expand on the definition of equivocation, taken from a Glossary of Grammatical and Rhetorical Terms (emphases added):

“Equivocation is a **fallacy** by which a key word or phrase in an argument is used with more than one **meaning**. ... Also known as *semantic equivocation*.

“In a broader sense, *equivocation* refers to the use of vague or unclear language, especially when the intention is to mislead or deceive an audience.” (<https://www.thoughtco.com/equivocation-fallacy-term-1690672>)

Looking at the word “equivocation” in a thesaurus we find synonyms such as “deceptiveness, duplicity, fallacy, fibbing and misinterpretation”. And when we look at the antonyms for “equivocation”, we are given words including “truthfulness, trustworthiness, uprightness and honesty”. (Important clarification: please note, I am not claiming that all those who believe/teach the gap theory are deliberately misleading people. However, it IS a doctrine that can only appear plausible when kept as vague as possible whenever reference is made to it.)

With this definition of equivocation in mind, it would seem that anyone who cares about the truth and sanctity of God’s word, and who has the responsibility to teach it, would be well advised to stay clear of utilising this misleading and deceptive literary device.

That is, quoting God’s word and then implying another meaning, quite different from the original Hebrew found in the Old Testament manuscripts and, in fact, not used in *any* Bible version.

The Gap Theory is Dependent on Equivocation

The gap theory is an example of the systematic employment of equivocation, because it relies on swapping the meaning of words – words that are *not* interchangeable, as any English student would know. To illustrate this, I have chosen just four examples of equivocation. But first, let us see how God describes the matter of creation and time:

“For in **six days** the LORD **made** the heavens and the earth, the sea, and all that is in them, and rested the seventh day. Therefore the LORD blessed the Sabbath day and hallowed it.” (Ex 20:11)

“Then God said, ‘Let Us **make** man in Our image, according to Our likeness’ ... Then God saw everything that He had **made**, and indeed it was very good. So the evening and the morning were the sixth day.” (Gen 1:26-31) ... “But from the **beginning** of the **creation**, God ‘**made** them male and female’.” (Mark 10:6; Gen 1:27; Gen 5:2) ... “And He said to them, ‘The Sabbath was made for man, and not man for the Sabbath.’” (Mark 2:26)

There is no equivocation or ambiguity here. God tells us time began on Day One of the **creation** process. Man was **created** in His image on Day Six, and the Sabbath was instituted on the first-ever **Seventh Day**, as a memorial to God’s act of **creation**, when He rested from all His labours.

Now if we look at the *equivocal* teachings taken from the media of one church organisation, which dogmatically and exclusively teaches the gap theory, we are told the following:

“The Sabbath was created right there at the very beginning” ... “...the beginning, when time started to be counted on Day 1” (Refer www.ucg.org/beyond-today/beyond-today-television-program/remembering-the-sabbath, and *Beyond Today* magazine, July-Aug 2018, page 10.)

On the surface, this appears to be confirming the biblical account. In reality, however, nothing could be more confusing in this statement. This is because Day 1, in this church’s creation story, is Day 1 of a RE-creation period, and the “very beginning” of time is said to have commenced 13.7 billion years earlier at the birth of the universe, in accordance with the timeline and epochs of evolutionary geology and cosmology. (Refer ‘Creation or Evolution: Does It Really Matter What You Believe?’, United Church of God, booklet available to download online.)

This church also teaches that the earth (in fact, the whole universe) was totally demolished by the devil sometime during this planet’s claimed 4.6-billion-year history, and then “RE-made” by God 6000 years ago at the beginning of the “age of man” (their words). That means, in this scenario, the Sabbath, which Jesus said was “made for man” (Mar 2:27), was NOT “right there at the beginning [of creation] ...when time started to be counted” at all (as stated in this church’s media). Rather, the Sabbath is attributed to a day commemorating a recent “renovation” (another term used in gap creation). This “renovation” is said to have taken place 4.6 billion years AFTER the creation of the earth and 13.7 billion years AFTER the beginning of time, at the claimed secular event of the big bang. These events, however, are *never* placed onto a timeline, which would immediately reveal the contradictions and confusion in the gap theory.

And so, the above quoted statement, about the Sabbath being there at the beginning of time, doesn’t make sense on any level in the gap theory. This is a prime example of semantic equivocation – “a *fallacy* by which a key word or phrase in an argument is used with more than one *meaning... with the intention to mislead an audience*”.

Second Example of Equivocation

Another example of equivocation can be heard in a short-film creation narrative for children, produced by the same church, which not only proclaims the gap theory but also despises the teaching of young earth creation in no uncertain terms. The singer in this film is a Muppet-like character called

Jelly. Here is the transcript, where every word that should say “**re-made**”, in accordance with this church’s gap theory belief, is being stated as “made”.

“Ahem. God **made** the earth in seven days, seven days, seven days, God **made** the earth in seven days, God **made** the earth! The first day He **made** the light, **made** the day, **made** the night, the first day He **made** the light, God said ‘That’s good!’ The second day He **made** the sky, all the clouds sailing high, the second day He **made** the sky, God said ‘That’s good!’

“The third day He **made** the land and the plants, it was grand! The third day He **made** the land, God said ‘That’s good!’ God **made** the earth in seven days, seven days, seven days, God **made** the earth in seven days, God **made** the earth. The fourth day He **made** the lights, sun by day, moon by night, the fourth day He **made** the lights, God said ‘That’s good!’ The fifth day He gave the word, swimming fish, flying birds, the fifth day He gave the word, God said ‘That’s good!’

“The sixth day He **made** the life, animals, man and wife, the sixth day He **made** the life, God said ‘That’s good!’ The seventh day He took a rest, sabbath day, it was blest, the seventh day He took a rest, God took a rest. Oh, God **made** the earth in seven days, seven days, seven days, God **made** the earth in seven days, God **made** the earth.” (www.ucg.org/jelly/jelly-and-the-days-of-creation)

Almost every eighth word in this song is an equivocation, having changed its meaning while pretending it has not (ie. using the biblical word **made** while teaching that it really means “**re-made**”).

Not only that, but the children watching this film would never know this is all about a re-creation – a doctrine this church sees as crucial in order to explain the devil’s rebellion and why evil exists in the world (as I explore in the next chapter – ‘Origin of the Devil’).

And there is something else. This song claims that “God **made** the earth in **seven days**”, which is a blatant violation of Scripture, because the Bible tells us “in **six days the LORD made heaven and earth....**” (Ex 20:11).

No wonder God instructs us that it is not good enough to “receive the word with all readiness”, but we must also “search the Scriptures daily to find out *whether these things [are] so*” (Acts 17:11). This is because what we are being told in a church, or by a minister, may not be true, as we can see here.

All this is important, considering the ministry of this particular church has publicly condemned the young earth creation narrative as a “satanic heresy” of the highest order, which must never be discussed among the members or they will be asked to leave. Other churches or individual gap theorists may not be that dogmatic, but the arguments regarding equivocation are the same.

It is also ironic that these gap-theory claims are coming from a church organisation that worships on the Sabbath day – *but not according to the biblical explanation*, which, once again, has to be (secretly) equivocated. Below, I state what Ex 20:11 *REALLY* means in this theology, although it is *NEVER* expressed openly as such.

“For in six days the LORD **RE-made** heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested the seventh day **of the renovation**: wherefore the LORD blessed the sabbath day, and hallowed it.” (Ex 20:11)

Talk about inconsistency, chaos and confusion!

Referring to yet other equivocations expressed in this church’s material, the **six-day creation** account (as clearly defined in Scripture) has been REJECTED. And it has been REPLACED with a six-day period, in which God inexplicably “**set** [the creation] **in order**” and “**moulded the planet**”.

I say “inexplicably” because there are seven references to the “creation” in this 40-page booklet but *not one mention of the gap theory* to explain what these words are meant to communicate. And so the reader is left with the following cryptic, recondite, equivocal explanation:

“After six days of **setting in order** this beautiful earth and everything in it, our Creator ceased from **moulding** the physical part of His creation and rested on the seventh day (Genesis 2:1-3)... On the Sabbath we are to take the day off from our regular activities and devote our time and attention to our Creator. Why? Because in six days God **set in order** ‘the heavens and the earth, the sea, and all that is in them, and rested the seventh day. Therefore the Lord blessed the Sabbath day and hallowed it’ (Exodus 20:11)”. (United Church of God, *The Ten Commandments*, pp31-32.)

In yet another of this church’s publications, the 64-page booklet *Sunset to Sunset, God’s Sabbath Rest*, there is not one mention of an “**initial earth**”, a “**re-creation**”, a “**renovation**”, “**setting in order**” the earth and “**moulding**” the heavens, or any other gap theory term. Rather, we are repeatedly told about the “six days of creation week” and the “creation commemoration” because “God made the Sabbath holy at creation”, when in reality, this church vehemently denies all of this.

And the equivocations/inconsistencies continue, such as when a minister wants to draw specific attention to the matter of the gap theory in a sermon. On occasion, he will clearly refer to the “**renovation**” – knowing full well it has a *different meaning to creation*, which is precisely why he uses this word. But after he has made his point, that same minister will once again return to using the biblical word “creation”. Such communications are fundamentally dishonest, yet acceptable to many Christians. How can this be when God instructs his people of the need to “recognise the Spirit of Truth and the spirit of falsehood” (1 John 4:6)?

These examples of equivocation (applying the spirit of falsehood) are similar, in practice, to that of ministers who preach theistic evolution.

I know, because I used to attend such a church. There the pastor would deliver an entire sermon on the glorious creation account and how the first man and woman were created from the dust of the earth, as laid out in the first two chapters of Genesis, when in reality he didn’t believe a word of it!

To the listener, it appeared to be the biblical truth of how God created, when all the while the minister saw it as a myth, a fable, a poetic narrative that did not have to be taken literally – ie. a non-truth. Yet he never explained this to the congregation.

The dictionary meaning of Equivocation shows it is the antithesis of clarity:

“deliberate evasiveness in wording : the use of ambiguous or equivocal language ‘Like any good teacher, he does his best to answer with clarity and *minimal equivocation*’ – Eric Bugyis.” (Merriam-Webster Dictionary)

“allowing the possibility of several different meanings, as a word or phrase, especially with intent to deceive or misguide; susceptible of double interpretation; deliberately ambiguous” (<http://www.dictionary.com/browse/equivocal>).

There is not a single case of equivocation found in Scripture (that is, except possibly in Is 28: 1-13, where God is mocking the ‘wise’). Nevertheless, the gap theory cannot exist without it.

Equivocation Example Three

Another example of equivocation is taken from an online Bible Commentary from the same church, which mandates acceptance of the gap theory for its members. Under the heading ‘Introduction to Genesis 1:1-2:4’, there are 25 references to the “creation”. (See screengrab on website.)

However, this church categorically rejects the teaching that Genesis 1:1-31 describes the CREATION. In other words, every reference to the “creation” stated in this material (except one) really means “renovation”. We see this half way through this section of the commentary, where we are told that Gen 1:2 to Gen 2:4 is “actually a **renovation**”.

“Thus, the **creation** account that then follows is actually the account of the **renovation** of the earth.”

After which this Bible commentary goes back to the Bible’s description of CREATION week again, even though this church KNOWS that the teaching of this being a creation is in stark contrast to its teaching about a “RE-creation” or “renovation”.

“God accomplishes the final act of **creation week** by resting ... In other words, when the seventh day of **creation week** began, God had *already* ceased His work of **creating**.” (<http://bible.ucg.org/bible-commentary/Genesis/Creation;-Earth's-six-day-renovation;-The-Sabbath>)

When trying to point this equivocation out to a gap theory friend, their reply was “create or re-create, it’s the same thing”. Firstly, these words *do not* mean the same thing. The Merriam-Webster Dictionary describes the difference: “**Create**: to bring into existence”; “**Recreate**: to create again, to form anew”. And to clarify this further, let’s look the other word gap creation employs – “**Renovation**: to restore to a former better state (as by cleaning, repairing, or rebuilding)”.

Secondly, if, for argument’s sake, the words Create and Re-create/Renovate did mean the same thing, why not make it clear which meaning is implied so everyone else can understand what is being communicated, especially when it is deemed such an important doctrine? And I challenge the writers of the above-mentioned Bible Commentary on Genesis to do just that – to be consistent and clear by using the word they mean, not the word they don’t mean!

This equivocal practice of slipping and sliding between two completely different concepts is an endemic in the gap theory!

Example Four: Omitting Scriptures to the Contrary

Another practice of those who advocate gap creation is to omit the Scriptures that don’t fit the theory. This is the same with theistic evolution, because the very nature of all old-earth theories is that they are **incapable** of joining all the biblical pieces together. Once someone tries to do this, they will see they don’t fit. And I can only surmise that certain “inconvenient” Scriptures are ignored for one of two reasons.

1: The communicators themselves are sincere but they do not see a need for their arguments to fit together cohesively. This is because they are already convinced they are right and so they can live comfortably with inconsistencies.

2: The other reason is that such a communicator can feel a sense of superiority in appearing more knowledgeable than other people through their ability to “find special revelation or knowledge in the Scriptures”. Thus they are able to lead those who are susceptible to equivocal language and double interpretations around in endless philosophical circles. One gap creationist I spoke to actually told me that the secrets of the gap theory are only known to those whom God has revealed them to. **And if you don’t understand it, it is a sign that you don’t know God.**

Whatever the heart and intention of such gap creation proponents, only God knows, but passionate advocates of gap creationism, by necessity, have to destroy the path of both logical and biblical reasoning to defend their chosen creation model. Below is another example of what I mean:

When Jesus was contending with a group of antagonistic Jews who would not believe what he said, he challenged them and provided one of the most descriptive Scriptures in the Bible about the character of the devil:

“Why do you not understand My speech? Because you are not able to listen to My word” ... [The devil] was a **murderer from the beginning**, and does not stand in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaks a lie, he speaks from his own resources, for he is a liar and the father of it” (John 8:43-44).

To emphasise this point, the apostle John reiterates Jesus’s words.

“He who sins is of the devil, **the devil has sinned from the beginning**. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that He might destroy the works of the devil.” (1 John 3:8)

The Hebrew word for “beginning” here is *arche* and it means “beginning, origin, absolutely, of the beginning of all things”. To my knowledge, however, this crucial characterisation of Satan is not referred to in gap creation material, which is *all about the devil!* (An example: the 72-page booklet quoted above, ‘Creation or Evolution Does It Really Matter What You Believe?’, and other material from the same church, make no mention of this fact.) And it is no surprise why, because how can Jesus’s description of the devil being a liar and “a murderer from the beginning” be true if the gap theory – which teaches that the devil was NOT a liar and murderer from the very beginning, or in fact for millions/billions of years – is true?

There is also the matter of Jesus’s clear teaching in Mark 10:6, when, once again, he was contending with those who refused to believe his words. Here he was speaking to the Pharisees, who were trying to test Him on the matter of divorce. In reply, Jesus explained that the law of Moses permitted divorce because of the hardness of the people’s hearts. Then he made an unequivocal statement – that man was made at the beginning of the CREATION (i.e. creation week).

“But from the **beginning of the creation**, God ‘made them male and female.’” (Mark 10:6)

Neither of the verses are convenient in gap creationism, which teaches that God made man 13.7 billion years *after* He created the heavens and the earth.

Not listening to Jesus’s words in order to defend any doctrine is yet another example of not being honest with Scripture.

Now let us take a moment to think this matter through, because if the gap theory is true it has to make sense –biblically and also logically:

1) One of the gap theory’s leading arguments is that the devil NEEDED millions or billions of years to commit sin. But if we look to the Bible, this argument is without any foundation. Why? Because it did not take Adam very long at all to bring sin into a sinless creation (Gen 3:17).

2) Likewise, there is no reason to believe that it would take one third of the angels, who shared the same rebellious spiritual nature of Lucifer, million or billions of years to sin, either.

3) And had the devil sinned at the beginning of “initial creation” and ascended into heaven to wage war against God, and God had cast him down to the earth with the angels who had also sinned at the beginning, what then was happening on earth for the next 4.6 billion years according to the timescale the gap theory has accepted? And more importantly, what purpose would God have had to allow this chaos and confusion on the earth for all this time?

4) If the gap theory were true, why would Jesus have called the devil “a murderer from the beginning” Who did the devil murder? After all, man did not come into existence for another 13.7 billion years, according to gap theory doctrine, and spirit beings can’t be murdered.

In this chapter, I have provided just four examples of using vague and confusing communications – in the form of plainly quoting the words of Scripture on one hand while duplicitously and covertly changing their meaning on the other, as well as the problem of employing deficient arguments. The Bible has two words for this – double-mindedness and instability and it is not referred to in a positive light (Jas 1:8;4:8).

Now I will embark on an exploration of the gap theory, which begins with the story of the devil and his claimed part in the creation narrative and God’s plan.

Reiterating – the gap theory is fundamentally an inconsistent doctrine that is wholly reliant on applying double talk and double meanings to God’s word. Those who teach this doctrine may not be aware of this fact, thus I do not cast any accusation on any of them that they do this knowingly – most teach it as they have been taught. This discordant doctrine, however, does not reflect the God of the Bible, who tells us He did not communicate with Moses (who penned the Genesis creation account) in “riddles” or “dark” enigmatic speeches, but “clearly” and in “plain language” (Num 12:8).

“Draw near to God and He will draw near to you. Cleanse your hands, you sinners; and purify your hearts, you double-minded.” (Jas 4:8)

“He who sins is of the devil, for the devil has sinned from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that He might destroy the works of the devil”. (1 John 3:8)

CHAPTER 2

Origin of the Devil

SYNOPSIS: When were Lucifer, the universe and man created? – Rebellion against God’s authority – What is the origin of evil and suffering? – How did the Fall affect the heavenly host, man, the planet and the world? The work of the devil – Christ our Redeemer – All explained in the Bible without the need for a gap theory.

According to gap creationism, the gap theory is essential if we are to accommodate the fall of angels – and the origin of evil – into the creation account. No other explanation will suffice. Here I examine this claim for any biblical support.

From Genesis to Revelation, God has told us all we need to know about where evil came from – it originated with the rebellion of the devil and it affected both heaven and earth. And if we take the Scriptures, as they are written, we are told that God created everything perfect (“exceedingly good”) in both the spiritual and physical domains. However, Lucifer’s rebellion against God and His righteous ways was the beginning of sin, evil and condemnation in the *spiritual realm* (Is 14:12-17; Eze 28:13-19). As a consequence, God placed a curse on the devil, who will be thrown into the lake of fire at the appointed time (Gen 3:14; Rev 20:3, 10).

As for man’s disobedience, by listening to the serpent instead of his Creator, this brought sin and death into the *physical realm* (Rom 5:12; 1 Cor 15:21). And so, the whole creation came under the spiritual and physical bondage of sin under the influence of the devil, for a time. (Refer Gen 3:17; Rom 6:6, 16; John 8:34; Is 24:5-6; Rom 8:22-24).

This explains why the physical domain has been subjected to corruption, pain, suffering and death and man has been blinded to God’s truth and is deceived by the god of this world – the prince and ruler of darkness (Gen 3:14-19; 2 Cor 4:4; Eph 6:11-12).

Not only that but, as Jesus told his disciples, sorrows will increase as the end draws near, “because *iniquity* shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold ... and unless those days were shortened, no flesh would be saved...” And the first being in whom iniquity was found was Lucifer (Eze 28:15).

The apostle Paul also warned that in the last days “perilous times will come, as evil men and imposters will grow worse and worse, deceiving and being deceived” (2 Tim 3:1-5, 13). And all because the whole world is under the influence of the evil one – the devil (1 John 5:19; John 17:15; Matt 5:37; Matt 6:13; John 17:15; 2 Thess 3:3). So great will this level of deception become that even some true believers will be led astray (Matt 24:24).

However, the good news (gospel message) is that the unrighteous first man Adam and his unrighteous descendants has been redeemed from the curse of breaking God’s commandments through the sacrificial blood of the righteous second man, the last Adam – Jesus Christ. And through belief in what Jesus has done for us, and our subsequent repentance, we can be forgiven and reconciled to our Creator (Mark 1:14-15; Acts 2:36-38; 1 Cor 7:23; Gal 3:13-14).

The Origin of the Devil

Now if we limit ourselves to Scripture and do not inject our own ideas, as God instructs us in Proverbs 30:5-6, God has given us plenty of information about Satan’s origin, his rebellion (and that

of his demons) and how evil and sin entered into the creation so we can make sense of the violent world in which we live.

God created Lucifer (or whatever he was called then) before man (Job 38:7) and he was perfect in all his ways. He radiated beauty and was full of wisdom and he was gifted with supreme musical ability. He was “the anointed cherub who covered God’s throne”.

In the plain reading of Scripture, we are also told that Lucifer, in all his magnificence, “has been in Eden the garden of God” (Eze 28:13-15).

But he corrupted his wisdom by reason of his splendour and, lifted up by pride, vanity and wickedness, he rebelled against his Creator. In a bid to exalt himself above God and the angels, the devil said in his heart “I will ascend into the heaven... I will be like the Most High” (Is 14:12-15; 1 Tim 3:6). But God cast him out of heaven to the earth (Rev 12:9).

The Bible also plainly tells us that some of the angels, who were created to be ministering spirits to those who will inherit salvation (Heb 1:13-14), “did not keep their first estate” (*arche*– “the first place, principality, rule, magistracy”). That is, the fallen angels rejected their God-given office and position of responsibility (Jude 1:6).

We are told all of this but with no clear indication as to exactly *when* it occurred. I continue:

Man and Woman in Paradise

The Bible tells us the first man and woman lived in a paradise – Eden – where everything was very good. Here they were given dominion over every creature, all of which were herbivores (Gen 1:29-30). Man was also told to tend and keep the beautiful garden (Gen 1:26-31; Ps 8:6). The man and woman were given free will, to choose between trusting God and obeying His single prohibition or entertaining the devil’s contrary ideas. The devil is responsible for deceiving and tempting Eve and leading man into sin. After this act in God’s good creation, Satan was cursed and the whole physical creation was cursed along with him (Gen 3:1-15).

As a result of one man’s willingness to listen to the devil and commit sin, mankind became “children of the devil”. When God condemned and cursed man and the planet, He withdrew His sustaining hand on His exceedingly good creation, and the entire physical realm became subject to death and decay (Gen 5:29). “For we know that the *whole creation* groans and travails in pain together until now. *And not only they, but ourselves also...*” (Rom 8:18-22).

After all, why should sinful man enjoy the privilege and blessing of living in a glorious, peaceful environment after he had brought sin into it and it came under the sway of the evil one?

(Rom 5:12-18; Gen 3:17-18; 1 Cor 15:21; 1 John 5:19)

When man sinned, it changed the whole creation. Man became unrighteous and his relationship with his Creator was fractured (Is 64:6, 9; Rom 3:10-12; Ps 14:2-3).

The first man and woman were driven out of the Garden of Eden, thorns and thistles sprang up all over the planet, and pain and sorrow entered the now-decaying creation (Gen 3:22-24).

Now that man had rejected God as his authority, sinned and become a lawless being (1 John 3:4), God subjected him to a life of bondage on a corrupted planet under a godless and evil system ruled by the devil (John 12:31; John 14:30), who (for a time) holds the power of death (Heb 2:14-15).

The roles of man and woman had altered, too, and demon-inspired selfishness, unrighteousness and division ruled mankind’s hearts and relationships (Jas 3:14-16; Rom 3:10-12; 1 Cor 1:10). Life would now be dangerous and hard work, man would never be satisfied whatever he did, and he would

experience anguish and agony and eventually die, returning to the dust of the ground from whence he came (Gen 3:16-19; Rom 5:12; Rom 8:20-23).

As time progressed, the evil of man filled the earth and God judged, condemned and destroyed it, saving only Noah and his family to start afresh (Gen 6:5-8).

Nevertheless, sinful man was now doomed to fail and die in an evil world.

God came to earth as the man Jesus, born of a virgin. He was sinless, resisted the devil's temptations and willingly became the perfect sacrifice to take our place (Matt 4:1-11; John 10:18; Heb 10:14). Jesus was crucified on the cross for our sins and thus He conquered the devil, who is the prince of this world (Col 2:14-15; John 16:11). In this way, Christ redeemed mankind and opened the way for God's forgiveness (1 Cor 15:55-57; 1 Thess 4:16-17).

Christ gave himself for our sins to rescue us from this present evil world and to destroy the works of the devil, the enemy of all righteousness (Gal 1:4; 1 John 3:8; Acts 13:10).

"He who sins is of the devil, for the devil has sinned from the beginning. For this purpose, the Son of God was manifested, that He might destroy the works of the devil." (1 John 3:8)

Through Jesus' righteous death on the cross, he gained victory over sin and death, and will restore the whole creation (Rom 8:21; 1 Cor 15:54-57). But until Christ returns, the devil remains the god of the evil systems of this world, the father of lies, a counterfeiter who deceives the inhabitants of the whole world (2 Cor 4:4; Job 1:6-12; Rev 12:9).

The devil, who fell from heaven, is the prince of the power of the air, the serpent of old who disguises himself as an angel of light and leads the world into disobedience (Luke 10:18; Eph 2:2; 2 Cor 11:14). He is the destroyer, the wicked and evil one and our adversary (Ps 17:4; John 17:15; Matt 13:19, 39).

Warnings About the Devil

We are warned against giving place to the devil, because he is the enemy of righteousness who tries to ensnare us, and we are instructed to be sober and vigilant and to resist him (Eph 4:27; Acts 13:9-10; Jas 4:7; 1 Tim 3:7).

This is because our struggle is not against flesh and blood but against powers of this dark world and spiritual forces of evil in heavenly places (Eph 6:12-16). The devil tries to destroy God's work (Matt 13); he was a murderer from the beginning and our sworn enemy (John 8:44; Luke 10:19). A roaring lion who seeks to devour us, he tempts us to sin (1 Pet 5:8; Matt 4:3; 1 Thess 3:5).

Just prior to Christ's return, Satan will have seduced all the peoples of earth to worship him (Rev 13:14-16).

During this time, the devil will try to annihilate every one of God's people and bring about the destruction of the earth, as he will gather the armies of the world together to fight against Christ at His return. But he will not prevail (Rev 12:9; Dan 2:44; Rev 16:14; Rev 19:11-16; 2 Thess 2:9-12; 2 Cor 11:3; Rev 13:7).

Man owed a debt he could not pay. Jesus voluntarily paid a debt he did not owe!

"For God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have everlasting life." (John 3:16)

“Therefore My Father loves Me, because I lay down My life that I may take it again. No one takes it from Me, but I lay it down of Myself. I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again. This command I have received from My Father.” (John 10:17-18)

“For the love of Christ compels us, because we judge thus: that if One died for all, then all died; and He died for all, that those who live should live no longer for themselves, but for Him who died for them and rose again.” (2 Cor 5:14-15)

When Christ returns in great glory, as the Prince of Peace, King of kings and Lord of lords, the whole world will know he is our Lord Creator who reigns (Zech 14:1-21). He will chain Satan for 1000 years, usher in world peace and restore the entire creation (Is 11:6-9; Is 65:25; Hos 2:18; Matt 24:30). After that time, the devil will be thrown into the lake of fire (Rev 20:10). Then the old creation will pass away and there will be a new earth and a new heaven, and the New Jerusalem will be established.

There will be no more tears, no more mourning and no more death, for the old evil order of things will have passed away (Rev 21 and Rev 22).

(Note: I know there are three main beliefs regarding Bible prophesy – amillennialism, premillennialism and postmillennialism – and gap creationists and young earth creationists would vary on their views on this matter. I also understand that matters of eschatology are not salvation issues, because we will never have a full knowledge in this lifetime. But as a premillennialist myself, this is the view I have taken in this exploration.)

And Here is My Point

All of this and much, much more *is not dependent on the questionable and controversial re-interpretation of five words in Gen 1:1-2,7 (hayah, tohuw and bohuw, bara and asah)* which has been used, by a small number of people, to justify the insertion of a “backstory” into the creation account – where there is *not one mention of the devil, evil or sin!*

The idea that gap creationism is essential in order to understand the devil’s rebellion and the existence and development of evil in our world is an invalid argument. It is based on a preference for secondary sources and an unwillingness to accept what the Scriptures actually say. Thus it is a composition of unbiblical reasoning (as I have shown above).

The origin, nature and work of the devil are not secrets that require special interpretation. God’s people have understood this for millennia, because it is all in the Bible– from Genesis to Revelation – which must always be our primary source over anyone’s “special” interpretation of it.

“For every beast of the forest is Mine, And the cattle on a thousand hills. I know all the birds of the mountains, And the wild beasts of the field are Mine.” (Ps 50:10-11)

“Now the serpent was more cunning than any beast of the field which the LORD God had made. And he said to the woman, ‘Has God indeed said, “You shall not eat of every tree of the garden”?’”
(Gen 3:1)

CHAPTER 3

Devil in the Garden

SYNOPSIS: From Lucifer to Satan – Why, when and how did the devil rebel? – Can this event fit into a young-earth scenario? – What about the angels? – What the Bible does *not* say – How much power does the devil really have? – A recent-earth creation narrative that ticks all the biblical boxes – The whisperer entices Eve – Who is the ruler over the earth? – What happened on the Mount – Was it possible for Jesus to fail? – Victory at Calvary.

In the gap theory, I have heard a minister argue that Satan and his angels needed billions of years before they would have sinned, because sin comes from our character and character takes time to develop. But this is not how the Bible describes sin, as it is full of examples of how sin can be conceived instantaneously and carried out a short time after it has entered a person’s heart and mind. The best example being Adam, who was a brand-new sinless creature and perfect at the beginning, and he was not deceived. He knew what he was doing when he took the fruit not long after he had been created. It was all a matter of the heart – pride and self-centredness: “You will be wise like God” (Gen 3:5-6). That is why God tells us “to flee sin” (1 Cor 6:18; 1 Cor 10:14), because it “crouches at the door” ready to ensnare us in seconds (Gen 4:7).

As for Lucifer, he, too, was created perfect and he knew what was happening when a spirit of lawlessness entered into his mind. And there is no logical reason to think it took billions of years to occur and then to develop to the point where he carried it out. Besides, Jesus tells us there is no time delay, because once sin has been conceived in a person’s heart, they are already pronounced guilty of committing it (Matt 5:28).

Here is another argument used to support the gap theory. According to one old-earth creation minister:

“Why was Satan in the garden with Adam and Eve? It makes no sense. If a person thinks the devil just slipped in and did all that great damage to Adam and Eve then you don’t know God. Satan was there in the Garden because he had already been established as the god of this earth and this is where his throne was.”

There are a number of possible young earth scenarios that answer these questions, showing that Satan’s sin and his rebellion fit perfectly within a 6000-year biblical framework.

Not only that but in these scenarios no Scriptures need to be questioned and altered (e.g. “was” changed into “became” – Gen 1:2) and no new vocabulary added (e.g. having to introduce unbiblical terms such as the “initial creation” and the “re-creation”). However, a person needs to take off their gap theory glasses so as to be able to *enter into, and engage with, the arguments* “to see if these things are so” (Acts 17:11).

The Devil’s History is Sketchy

Here I present my own summarised version of a recent earth creation narrative. I am not saying that all the explanations are correct, as I attempt to join the biblical dots, and I acknowledge there are other young earth creation narratives that have equally valid and differing points of view. But we are all in the same boat here whatever creation view we hold, because there is very little information about the

devil's history as the Scriptures are either sketchy or silent. Thus, each of us must rely on some speculation and our own interpretation. (For example, there are different opinions regarding the number of, and time of, Satan's rebellion/s.)

The important thing, however, is to stick within the framework of Scripture and to those biblical statements that do provide clear information, which I believe I have done.

The first time we read about God pronouncing a sentence on the devil – who was found guilty and then cursed – is found in Gen 3:14, after he tempted the first woman, Eve. But when did the devil lead one third of the angels to follow him in his rebellion (Rev 12:4)? When did he ascend to heaven to make war with God? When was he thrown down to the earth? Also, how many rebellions were there?

My purpose here is to show that a young-earth interpretation is supported scripturally and ticks all the boxes. And if the fall and rebellion of Satan can be accommodated on this 6000-year-old earth then *historically and theologically we don't need an initial old earth and re-creation*. Now I shall look into the main Scriptures regarding this matter, through the lens of one single recent creation completed in six days, in which *God* distinctly has the upper hand – *not* Satan.

Any gap creationist who can't see this shows they have never really explored it or they are unwilling to do so.

First, let us establish what *the Bible does not say*

- a) There is no example in the Bible of Satan destroying anything in the physical realm outside of God's permission (Job 1; Matt 24:22; Num 22:18).
- b) Nowhere are we told that *one third of the angels rebelled at the same time the devil sinned* – this has been an assumption based on the number of angels thrown out of heaven (Rev 12:24).
- c) Lucifer did not literally try to take God's throne. He knew that would be impossible. Rather he *wanted* to have authority over the angels and to be like God (Is 14:13-14), and "the whisperer" has always operated through stealth and deception.
- d) There is also the unwarranted assumption that when the devil sinned and rebelled, he initiated great violence against God and His creation. As such "the devil's rebellion" is automatically equated with "war in heaven and earth".

All of these points are important in our analysis. Referring to these Scriptures, as well as Gen 1-3; Ezekiel 28, Luke 9-10; John 12:23-31; Job 38:6-7 and Revelation 12, I believe the following scenario is biblically sound.

A Young Earth Creation Narrative: in the Beginning...

Lucifer was a magnificent spirit being, perfect when he was created. He was the anointed cherub who had the great privilege to cover the very throne of God. How long the angelic realm existed before the creation of the physical domain, we are not told. Some people believe the angels were created during the six-day creation week and have Scriptures to back this up; others argue that the angelic host are not subject to the timeframe of the physical realm. The fact is, we will never know in this life.

What we do know is that the biblical job descriptions of angelic beings is to serve and worship God, executing His judgments, delivering messages and ministering to man, the heirs of salvation (Gen 3:24; Rev 20:1-3; Eze 9:1-11; Dan 10; 1 Kings 19:5-7; Gen 16:7; Heb 1:14).

The word “throne” in Hebrew (*kicce*) can mean a seat of royal dignity (Eze 28:2), but it can also represent an office of honour, authority and power. The archangel Lucifer began with a position of honour and authority (as God’s ministering cherub).

The question is *when* did the devil acquire his *worldly* seat of power on earth?

Gap creationists say it was billions of years ago on the “initial earth”; young earth creationists say it was about 6000 years ago on *this* earth. (The few people who hold to the gap principle and say that the gap of time could have been as little as a few days or months don’t resolve anything, because all the same problems exist no matter how much time is inserted, as I explain further on.)

Picking Up the Young Earth Scenario Again

Job 38:7 says that “all the sons of God” (angels) were present when the foundations of the earth were laid and they sang for joy, and no wonder, it must have been stunning to witness the birth of the physical creation. But God needed to give man free choice to see if he would choose to submit to His authority. So He planted a garden for the man (joined later by the woman) and placed a tree in its midst – the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, specifically to test man (angels didn’t need to eat).

“The LORD God planted a garden eastward in Eden, and there He put the man whom He had formed. And out of the ground the LORD God made every tree grow that is pleasant to the sight and good for food. The tree of life was also in the midst of the garden, and the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. ... And the LORD God commanded the man, saying, ‘Of every tree of the garden you may freely eat; but of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil you shall not eat, for in the day that you eat of it you shall surely die.’” (Gen 2:8-9;16-17)

It could not have taken very long for Lucifer’s mind to become twisted, only days or weeks after man’s creation. This is because the first humans were told to procreate. And if Adam and Eve had children *before* sinning, it would have caused all manner of theological dilemmas.

And so, at some point, between *the entire* angelic host singing for joy and Eve’s temptation, something happened to Lucifer’s mind. If not prior to the creation, by now he would know the earth was not made for him or the heavenly host but for man, who alone would rule it and tend and care for it. Also, it was man who had been given the authority to name all the animals and to have dominion over them, as with everything else in this brand new (and only) creation (Ps 8:6). But most astounding of all, man was commanded to put God’s glory on display by going forth and multiplying life – in the image of his Maker! No other creature had been granted such privileges and such honour – an intimate relationship, to marry and have children in their own likeness and in the likeness of their Creator God.

Lucifer Becomes Satan

Did Lucifer feel he had been short-changed in the created order of things? The plain reading of the Bible shows that man’s potential far outstripped the heavenly host, who had not been created to become the children of God. Man was created to be a little lower than the angels, but only for a while. He was made ruler of the works of God’s hands, and all living things in the physical creation were put in subjection to him (Gen 1:26-28). King David and the prophet Job were in awe of God’s purpose and love for man:

“What is man that You are mindful of him, And the son of man that You visit him? For You have made him a little lower than the angels, And You have crowned him with glory and honour. **You have made him to have dominion over the works of Your hands; You have put all things under his feet...**” (Ps 8:4-6)

“What is man, that You should exalt him, That You should set Your heart on him? (Job 7:17)

Mankind's destiny was to govern the world under the authority of the Lord and to be loved as His children (1 John 3:2; 2 Cor 6:18). And Lucifer was not happy, because in his heart *he* wanted to rule the earth and rule over the stars of God (angels) and be just like the Most High (Is 14:13-14). He wanted that power but knew his limitations. Not having the backbone to confront the Almighty face to face, he turned his attention towards his perceived enemy, the new and weaker creature – man.

Lucifer was wise and thought he knew everything, but he did not. And so, as Satan, he began to hatch a plan that he believed he could carry out “behind God’s back”.

The Bible describes Satan as a malevolent coward, not a mighty conqueror! Think how he insidiously stirred up hatred for Jesus from behind the scenes. Or how Absalom contrived against King David: “The words of his mouth were smoother than butter, but war was in his heart: his words were softer than oil, yet were they drawn swords” (Is 55:21).

God describes the serpent as the most subtle (sly, cunning and crafty) of all creatures. His subversive and calculating character would have revealed its displeasure by murmuring and stirring up dissension *by stealth and deception, because the only weapon he has is to lie*.

Satan may well have found agreement with many angels early on. One thing is sure, those who listened to the devil's schemes would have been seduced by the promise of rich rewards, honoured positions and freedom, under his rule, from their God-given tasks to serve God and man. And all this would have been conducted covertly.

All the while God waited patiently. This was a testing time for man, and angels too.

Sinned from the Beginning

The devil hated man's potential and what he represented, so sin was conceived in his mind, and then murder. (The Bible is full of examples of this natural progression: Gen 27:41; Gen 4:5-8.)

Jesus said the devil “sinned from the beginning” and he was a “murderer from the beginning” – by deceiving Eve who led Adam to take the fruit that would bring about their death. (In a similar covert operation, King David was a murderer by extension when he sent a letter to his military commander, Joab, instructing that one of his elite soldiers, Uriah the Hittite, be dispatched into the fiercest part of the battle. This was David's secret scheme to bring about Uriah's death in the hope to cover up the fact he had conducted an affair with Uriah's wife and she was now pregnant; 2 Sam 11:14-15.)

The devil's scheme was to tempt man to sin by rebelling against the one command God had given him – not to eat the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. If he could succeed, he reasoned, then God's plan for man would fail.

This would prove how powerful he, the devil, was, and, over time, he could convince more angels to disobey God and follow him, as he set himself up as god of the earth with his own kingdom, or even lord of the universe! (We know his pride made him delusional.)

When Lucifer tempted Eve, she did not seem surprised to see him or to communicate with him. And as God had not yet cursed him, it is logical that Lucifer would have still been the glorious spirit being who is described as walking in Eden, the garden of God (Eze 28:13-14).

(Our fallen minds have no hope of imagining this Paradise, which operated on an ecological system incomprehensible to us today, since the Fall.)

The word “serpent” (literally “hissing” or “whisperer”) may well have been an illustrative title depicting his covert nature – i.e. an adjectival noun. For example, “serpent” in English can mean “a wily, treacherous, or malicious person”, and we talk about someone being as cunning as a fox, big as

a bear or as harmless as a dove. This, of course, does not mean that such a person literally has the appearance of a bear, a fox or a dove. The noun “devil” is also used in an adjectival sense, describing a “false accuser”. I think it is profound that God does not give us a name for Satan before he sinned. (The word Lucifer was not in the original biblical text but added later, from the Latin word *heyel* meaning “light bearer”. This is from the root word *hālal*, which means “boastful”.) It is as if God has made the name he had, prior to his sin, inaccessible to us – to have perished (Is 26:14).

The Whisperer Entices Eve

Lucifer – the serpent (literally, “the whisperer”) – would have dazzled Eve, with his illuminating beauty shining like precious jewels, as the prophet Ezekiel describes the devil’s appearance (analogous to the King of Tyre):

“Moreover the word of the LORD came to me, saying, ‘Son of man, take up a lamentation for the king of Tyre, and say to him, “Thus says the Lord GOD: ‘You [were] the seal of perfection, Full of wisdom and perfect in beauty. You were in Eden, the garden of God; Every precious stone was your covering: The sardis, topaz, and diamond, Beryl, onyx, and jasper, Sapphire, turquoise, and emerald with gold. The workmanship of your timbrels and pipes was prepared for you on the day you were created’”’.” (Eze 28:11-13)

Then Lucifer seduced Eve with his great words of “wisdom”. Maybe she trusted him because she had always seen him in the Garden with Yahweh, as His honoured covering cherub. God already knew what was going to happen, as their Creator was “the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world” (Rev 13:8). God is righteous and long-suffering and he knows the end from the beginning, but sometimes consequences have to be reached so people can learn from them. (In Genesis, for example, Abraham’s offspring were not allowed to take over the land for a long time, because the iniquity of the Amorites “was not yet full”, Gen 15:16.)

Eve had not personally heard God’s command to Adam – not to eat from the tree of the knowledge of good and evil – as she had not been created at that point in time. (Although Adam had instructed her later.) And so she listened to Lucifer’s lies that it would be of great benefit to her, and picked and ate the forbidden fruit. When she told Adam, it seemed the most natural thing in the world to say the serpent, “whisperer” (the Hebrew *nachash* even sounds like a *hiss*) had told her it was good. Adam’s response showed that he, too, was familiar with, and comfortable being persuaded by, this heavenly creature. After all, Adam and Eve knew that earthly animals, including serpents, didn’t speak.

Besides, Lucifer would have had far more success appearing in his god-like and angelic form as opposed to a long, skinny reptile without ears or eyelids and a flicking forked tongue (2 Cor 11:14).

When Adam committed original sin, mankind was condemned. God cursed the devil, the man and woman, and the whole creation as well.

Contrary to what the gap theory claims, God had never bestowed upon Lucifer the great honour to rule His beautiful creation for billions of years, and to continue that rule, after he had destroyed it, into the “re-creation” – even during the “re-creating” process! *Rather the devil acquired his rulership from Adam through fraudulent and devious means*, (telling him “You will be like God”) *as well as murdering him by leading him into sin, which incurred the death penalty*. (In a similar underhanded way, King Ahab “legally acquired” Naboth’s vineyard; 1 Kings 21; and King David “legally acquired” Bathsheba as his wife.)

The serpent was the oppressor who had been given the concession to influence man in order to test man’s faithfulness. Satan’s “clever” scheming resulted in this physical creature, man, transferring his allegiance from his Creator to the usurper.

But the devil's power came only from his feigned words. He was the first pretender in God's creation to manufacture lies (2 Pet 2:3).

Who is the Ruler of the Earth?

Satan had now attained part of the coveted role he wanted – to govern men's hearts and minds and to be "like the Most High". And as man had willingly placed himself in subjection to the Deceiver, God created a new office for the devil – he would be the "ruler of this world" (*kosmos*). This meant he was the "prince" commander over man and his descendants – the "god (vice regent) of this world". He would now have certain powers over the nations and the inhabitants of the earth who had been alienated from God, and therefore hostile to the cause of Christ (Matt 4:8-9; John 14:30).

The devil's prime means were deceptive communications, and by this medium he would institute the world's evil systems in rebellion against God law of love (1 John 5:19; 2 Cor 4:4). Thus, the pretender became the "prince of the power of the air". He also became the commander of the powers of the unseen world. The whole world would now be under his influence (Eph 2:1-3). And he held the power of death over his human subjects (Heb 2:14).

The devil's coup on earth was swift and absolute (or so he thought). He had gained "god-like" powers over the world and man's blood would be shed. And best of all, he didn't have to lift a finger to achieve this apparent success!

But ... and this is crucially important ... Nowhere is the devil referred to as the ruler of the earth or the ruler of kingdoms and nations, as some gap creationists mandate (citing Matt 4: 8-9).

God alone is Sovereign over the earth and determines the future of all peoples and nations.

"We are the servants of the God of heaven and earth" (Eze 5:11); "'For I am a great King,' says the LORD of hosts, 'And My name is to be feared among the nations'" (Mal 1:14); "The Most High rules" (Dan 4:32); "Lord God, creator of the heavens and the earth: For you, O LORD, are **supreme over all the earth**; you are exalted far above all gods." (Ps 97:9). "... For all his works are done in truth... the **earth** is full of the goodness of the LORD" (Ps 33:4-5). "For the kingdom is the LORD's, And **He rules over the nations**" (Ps 22:28). "**The LORD reigns**; Let the earth rejoice; Let the multitude of isles be glad!" (Ps 97:1)

The devil is described as "the god of **this world**" or the "ruler of **this world**" – which is not the same thing as the **ruler of the earth**. "The earth" is the creation and all that is in it, and "the world" is the present evil systems within it and the ungodly multitude alienated from God. So if Satan does not have the title "ruler of **this earth**", how could he have had the title "ruler of the *previous earth*"? More importantly, what Scripture says he was ruler of *any earth at any time*? And what Scripture tells us he was "**ruler of the world**" in a "previous creation"?

Understanding this distinction between ruler of the earth and ruler of the world is crucial in order to understand the true scope – and limitations – of the devil's power and his role in God's plan.

Temptation on the Mount

The devil did not have the authority to transfer his power or to share it with anyone without God's permission, as he claimed he did during Jesus' temptation on the Mount. This was another one of the devil's lies, as "there is no truth in him". That is why Jesus said he is "the father of lies" (John 8:44)! God Almighty already had ALL authority over heaven and earth, over all kingdoms, all nations and all people. And He could have given Jesus the position of ruler of **this world** had He wanted to, without Him bowing down to Satan, but Jesus' mission was to rescue mankind, taken hostage by the devil through sin.

“The earth is the LORD’s, and all its fullness, The world and those who dwell therein ... And among the inhabitants of the earth. No one can restrain His hand Or say to Him, ‘What have You done?’” (Ps 24:1; Dan 4:34-35)

“And Jesus came and spoke to them, saying, ‘All authority has been given to Me in heaven and on earth’.” (Matt 28:18)

Apart from the fact that Jesus could not sin, by going back on his word, and He came to earth to die for the redemption of man, He would *never* have taken over the temporary throne that had been created for the deceiver of the world (Matt 1:23; Is 9:6; John 1:1-3; Job 34:10; Rev 12:9-10).

In other words, Christ will never “replace” the devil on his seat of “worldly” power, as some gap theory believing ministers teach. Check it out – what Scripture says Christ will return to become the “ruler of this world”?

Rather we are told that in that day the Lord will return as “King of all the earth” (Zech 14:9) and he will sit on the righteous throne of David! “He shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the Highest: and the Lord God shall give unto him the throne of his father David” (Luke 1:32).

And when Jesus, after 40 days of fasting, was led into the wilderness to be tempted by the devil, notice that the devil did not offer Jesus “all the kingdoms of the earth” – but “all the kingdoms of the world” (*oikoumene* – “inhabitants of the world”).

“Again, the devil took Him up on an exceedingly high mountain, and showed Him all the kingdoms of the world and their glory. And he said to Him, “All these things I will give You if You will fall down and worship me’.” (Matt 4:8-9)

Furthermore, the devil falsely claimed to be able to give something that was not his to give. “And the devil said to Him, ‘All this authority I will give You, and their glory; for this has been delivered to me, and *I give it to whomever I wish*’” (Luke 4:5-6). In reality, however, any power Satan had was according to God Almighty’s sovereignty, because it is the Lord who “is the ruler of the kings of the earth” not Satan (Rev 1:5).

“Let every soul be subject to the governing authorities. For there is no authority except from God, and the authorities that exist are appointed by God.” (Rom 13:1)

No wonder Jesus shut down His communications with the devil after three temptations. After all, what can a person achieve by continuing to argue with a consummate liar?

Could Jesus Have Sinned?

There are those who say it was possible for Jesus to have sinned. (I’ve heard the arguments.) This, however, is blasphemy, because sin brings death, and Jesus was not subject to “the law of sin and death” (Rom 8:2). In other words, it was impossible for death to hold the Son of God, thus Jesus could not have sinned, because there could have been no atonement for him: “whom God raised up, having loosed the pains of death, because it was not possible that He should be held by it” (Acts 2:24). And had Jesus, hypothetically, chosen not to follow through his commitment to God, made before the foundation of the world” (Rev 13:8), he would have sinned. In that same way we would sin if we break a vow or commitment, particularly one to God.

“But let your ‘Yes’ be ‘Yes,’ and your ‘No,’ ‘No.’ For whatever is more than these is from the evil one.” (Matt 5:37)

And if God had sinned, he would be no greater than a human being. Also, he would have died and God’s promises would have failed and this is impossible. (“God cannot be tempted by evil” Jas 1:13.)

Also, 1 Cor 10:13 tells us that “God *is* faithful, who will not allow you to be tempted beyond what you are able, but with the temptation will also make the way of escape, that you may be able to bear *it*”. How is it possible then for God to promises this to us but not to his own Son?

God can relent from bringing about the destruction of people if they change their attitudes (Jer 26:3), but this does not contradict other Scriptures where God says he does not change (Jas, 1:17; Mal 3:6). This is because God’s character is immutable and his standards of love, truth and justice never alter (Deut 32:4; 1 John 4:8). If it were possible for God to sin (to go against his own laws and promises), then the Creator God would be a capricious God (like all the pagan gods) and we could never really be sure about our future or eternity.

Jesus was God, but he yielded to the Father’s will by becoming a humble human being – the last Adam, without sin – formed from the dust of the ground. He had God’s Spirit and character 100 per cent, but he voluntarily gave up his position in the Godhead to become a servant who was obedient to the Cross – as a human and the Son – who chose to totally rely on His Father. The depth of Jesus’s commitment, however, was independent of his Father’s. When Peter cut off the ear of one of the soldiers who came to arrest Jesus in the Garden of Gethsemane, Jesus makes the following statement: “Do you think that I cannot now pray to My Father, and He will provide Me with more than twelve legions of angels?”

In n other words, Jesus could have called on is Father for anything and it would have been provided. So when he prayed that the Father might take the cup from him, regarding the crucifixion, it was hypothetical. This is because he not only submitted to the Father’s will, but Jesus never lost sight of his commitment and his purpose, either. This makes the Son’s death truly voluntary.

“And he went a little further, and fell on his face, and prayed, saying, O my Father, **if it be possible**, let this cup pass from me: nevertheless not as I will, but as thou wilt.” (Matt 26:39)

As God, he could not sin! However, the human side of his physical existence was tested in every way man is tested.

He was thirsty, he was hungry, he was hot and cold, he was tempted and sleep deprived, he suffered mental agony, affliction, sorrows and grief, betrayal, desertion, severe pain and death. In other words, he was pushed to the physical, mental and emotional limits of a human being – but he could not be pushed into sinning! This means all his physical human suffering was absolutely real, but he never agonised, fearful of committing sin. It would have been an incredible thing for God to be in a man’s body with all its limitations. It has never happened before. That is why he is our high priest who understands our human limitations – he, too, has suffered the weakness of the flesh, but not spiritual weakness. He was Immanuel – God with us (Matt 1:23)!

Satan’s Powers Subject to God

Satan (the god of this *world*) has always been subordinate to the “the Most High *over all the earth*” and “the great King over all the earth” (Ps 83:18; Ps 47:2; Mal 1:14). And the only power the devil has is what God has allowed him, which is a certain level of authority over the lives of those who sin. Being a cunning lawyer, Satan uses God’s law to his own end. That is why God had to “catch the wise in his own craftiness” – abolishing the legal power Satan has over mankind through Christ’s death (and resurrection). There was no other way.

Satan holds God to His word, but his power IS limited. For instance, Satan is unable to directly curse anyone. Nevertheless, he can bring about a curse by influencing people to sin (through their own freewill). An example is how Satan tempted the Israelites to “commit whoredom with the daughters of Moab”. In this way, he was able to get God to curse them and 24,000 Israelites were felled in a plague (Numbers 25:1-15). Another example of the devil’s limitations is when he appeared before God, who spoke of His righteous servant Job. Satan’s reply:

“Does Job fear God for nothing? Have *You not made a hedge around him, around his household, and around all that he has on every side?*... But now, stretch out Your hand and touch all that he has, and he will surely curse You to Your face!” (Job 1:9-12).

Here we read that Satan couldn’t even lay a hand on Job’s oxen, sheep, asses and camels, servants, brother’s house or children, or that he could not cause lightning strikes or gales without God’s permission.

And we are told, “There is no plan that can succeed against the Lord” (Pro 21:30).

Nevertheless, in old-earth creation we are expected to believe that the devil was so powerful, he destroyed the “awe-inspiring initial creation” to such an extent that all life was obliterated. Some gap creationists also claim that this destruction affected the entire cosmos, and God – the Lord and King of heaven and earth – was unwilling or unable to stop him.

Question for gap creationists: What reason would God have had to allow Satan free reign to destroy the planet and cause great destruction to the universe (as this doctrine teaches)?

As for man, God tells us that after he was expelled from Eden, he was still allowed to continue his dominion over the physical works of his Creator’s hands (Ps 8:6).

Satan had now fallen from God’s grace and his new position meant he no longer covered Yahweh’s throne. He had been cut down to the ground, possibly “cut down to size” – put in his place (Gen 3:14). He was cursed to “eat dust all the days of his life”. In other words, he would never gain satisfaction from anything he would attempt to accomplish. However, the devil still had access to heaven and God’s presence, as he was commanded to regularly present himself to report to the Almighty (Job 1:7-8). But what about the angels?

What about the Angels?

The devil’s character and tactics have always been cunning and subversive. No doubt some angels joined his rebellion at the beginning of his plan. But it is important to know that the definition of “rebellion” is sin (1 Sam 15:23) and sin is lawlessness – “to resist, or defy, God’s authority”; it does not automatically mean an attack on someone or something. As such, the devil’s “progress” at this stage did not have to include an out-and-out power struggle, or attempted coup.

Rather, his rebellious act had resulted in a transfer of power – from Adam to himself – via deceitful words, as opposed to violent means.

Perhaps Satan didn’t have enough angels in his camp yet to consider an attack. More likely it was all bravado and boasting as he knew he did not have that sort of power or authority to go to war with God (Is 14:13). Other angels could have “gone over to his side” over a period of time. Some may have been enticed by Satan’s surreptitious dealings while serving on in their God-given capacity on earth, or from having met him on his visits into the heavenly realms to present himself to God (Job 1:6).

As in the case of man, dissatisfaction and falsehoods soon gain momentum, as lies and slander spread, developing a devilish life of their own. And by the time the devil was cast out from heaven, never able to return again, it seems that one third of the angels had “crossed over to his side” (Rev 12).

This furtive activity is exactly the same strategy used in instituting a military coup in the physical realm. (Satan’s inspired tactics, perhaps?) That is because the chief pre-requisite is for the commander to have gained control of all or part of the armed forces before a group attempts to overthrow an existing government. This, of course, all fitted in with the greater scheme of God’s purpose, because He had to know if all his creatures would submit to his authority in faith, love and righteousness, angels included.

Victory at Calvary

As for *when* Satan learned about God's plan to redeem mankind through the blood of Christ, I don't believe this happened until after Jesus' death. After all, the disciples, who knew the Scriptures, didn't know. When they learned that Jesus was the Messiah, they thought he was going to restore the physical kingdom to Israel then, and when he died on the cross they were devastated by this unexpected turn of events.

Even after Jesus' resurrection, his disciples – who had travelled, studied and ministered under Jesus for most of his public ministry – seemed remarkably confused about what was happening (Acts 1:6-7). And on the road to Emmaus (pictured) they spoke dispirited of how they had hoped Messiah was “going to redeem Israel” in their lifetime (Luke 24:21). Even though they had knowledge of God's written word “... they did not know the Scripture, that He must rise again from the dead” (John 12:9).

Christ's appearances to his disciples after his death, and the coming of the Holy Spirit on the Day of Pentecost, encouraged them greatly, but they still thought he would return to earth while they were alive. It wasn't until the apostle John, late in his life, received a vision from God and wrote the Book of Revelation that it became clear to those who were capable of seeing and understanding (1 Pet 1:10-12) – Christ would return, but not the way they thought it would be.

This is because godly wisdom is a mystery that is inaccessible without direct revelation by the Holy Spirit (1 Cor 2:7-12). And God tells us that “He catches the wise in their own craftiness” (Job 5:12).

For 4000 years of human history, Satan thought he would win his battle against God.

Already he was ruler of the world. He had also claimed spiritual “victory” over man, who was now doomed to die! Such was the extent of the devil's “success”, he'd even managed to seduce God's special people Israel, too.

They constantly proved themselves faithless to God's covenant and when His wrath burned against them He destroyed them by the hundreds of thousands (2 Chron 13; Num 16:49; Num 25:9). God even destroyed all mankind on the planet (saving only eight people) during Noah's flood. (Some scientists have calculated the number of people who perished could have been around seven billion.)

And in some ways it must have seemed to the devil that he had been victorious over God, too, having killed Jesus and, apparently, frustrating His plans on every side.

But when Satan and his angels eventually learned that the Lord God Himself had come to earth as a human to take mankind's sins to the Cross, and that His death was all part of God's plan of salvation, which would open the way for mankind to be forgiven and reconciled to his Creator, the devil and his cohorts would have been shocked and furious!

This leads into my next chapter: Satan being thrown out of heaven and cast to the earth.

“Yours, O LORD, is the greatness and the power and the glory and the victory and the majesty, indeed everything that is in the heavens and the earth; Yours is the dominion, O LORD, and You exalt Yourself as head over all.” (1 Chron 29:11)

“How you are fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! How you are cut down to the ground, You who weakened the nations!” (Is 14:12)

CHAPTER 4

Devil Cast to Earth

SYNOPSIS: What did Jesus mean by the kingdom of God? – When would it be here on earth? – How much did the devil know about Jesus’s commission? – Did Jesus, the second man, have to qualify as a sinless human being to replace the sinful first man, Adam? – When did Satan fall like lightning from heaven? – Who is the ruler of the earth?

Not long before Jesus told his disciples of his impending death (Luke 9 & 10), he gave them authority to cast out devils and to preach, because “the kingdom of God has come near you”. His disciples returned astounded by their triumph in casting unclean spirits out of people. This had never been done before. It was then that “[Jesus] said to them, ‘I saw Satan fall like lightning from heaven’”. But what did he mean?

The time of Jesus’s ministry *was* the start of the kingdom of God on earth, as he was the kingdom among us. And after Jesus’s death and resurrection, Satan’s power would begin to wane on the earth. His iron grip would be released from those who believed in the power of the Cross and who would call Christ Lord – those who submitted to God in humility, repentance and faith and who kept his commandments (John 14:15). And even if/when the devil persecuted them on earth, their eternal life with the Lord would be secure.

(Note: I acknowledge there are those who believe in the teaching “once saved, always saved” – but it is my belief that it is the responsibility of each Christian to “finish the race”; Acts 20:23-24; 2 Tim 4:7; Eph 4:1. God promises he will never leave us nor forsake us, but he does not take away our freedom to reject and leave him, and thus suffer the consequences; Heb 6:4-6; Heb 3:6; Rev 3:11; Matt 24:4-5; 13:25; 46; Mark 3:28-30; Mark 13:13.)

Those who accept Christ would receive the gift of the Holy Spirit – the very nature and power of God dwelling within them, guiding them to live His way of life. This was to be the beginning of the New Covenant – a better covenant (Heb 7:22; Luke 22:19-20) – established on better promises between God and his people. This is because the Law of Moses, given by God to ancient Israel, was an inferior covenant for an allotted period of time (Heb 8:7). After all, the blood of goats and bulls could never save anyone (Heb 10:4). Only the sinless “precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot” could take away the sins of the world (1 Pet 1:17; 1 John 2:2).

“knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law but by faith in Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Christ Jesus, that we might be justified by faith in Christ and not by the works of the law; for by the works of the law no flesh shall be justified.” (Gal 2:16)

Jesus described the kingdom of God to the multitudes in the parable of the mustard seed. It would start off “smaller than all the seeds on earth, but when it is sown, it grows up and becomes greater than all herbs, and shoots out large branches” (Mark 4:31-32).

Such a small and apparently insignificant beginning (as small as a mustard seed) cannot describe the glorious and magnificent event when our King of kings, Lord of lords and Prince of Peace returns to the earth in full majesty, and all the inhabitants of the earth will see him (Matt 24:30; Mark 13:26). Having once walked the earth as a human being, wearing a simple tunic and leather sandals, Jesus is destined to return in his full glory, radiating like the sun and with eyes like flaming fire. He will be wearing many crowns and riding a white horse. A heavenly army, clothed in the finest linen and

mounted on white horses, will follow him (Rev 19:11-14). At that time, his feet will stand on the mount of Olives and the mount will cleave in two (Zech 14:4). Then the armies of the earth will gather together to attack him (Rev 19), but Christ will defeat the forces of evil and be victorious. He will then sit on the throne of David and establish the fulfilment of His kingdom, as He ushers in world peace to all who dwell on the earth.

“Of the increase of His government and peace There will be no end, Upon the throne of David and over His kingdom, To order it and establish it with judgment and justice From that time forward, even forever. The zeal of the LORD of hosts will perform this.” (Is 9:7)

But, as Jesus described to the Pharisees, His kingdom would begin as an unobservable event. They did not recognise that the kingdom of God – Jesus himself – was in their midst and that he was (and is) king of it. After his death and resurrection to glory, the kingdom would be planted into the hearts of believing and faithful men and women through the indwelling of the Holy Spirit.

“Now when He was asked by the Pharisees when the kingdom of God would come, He answered them and said, ‘The kingdom of God does not come with observation; nor will they say, “See here!” or “See there!” For indeed, the kingdom of God is [in the midst of] you’..” (Luke 17:20-21).

Satan’s Grip on The World Loosens

When the kingdom of God took root with the coming of Christ, 4000 years after the creation, Satan’s grip on the world began to loosen, and a small number of people would become citizens of a new kingdom [in the spiritual realm] under a new King, with new rules, a new covenant and new administration (Luke 17:21). A few days before Jesus’ last Passover, he said: “The hour is come, that the son of man should be glorified... *Now* is the judgment of this world: *now* shall the prince of the world be cast out” (John 12:1-31). The Greek word for “now” (*nyn*) means “at this time, the present”.

Jesus’s kingdom was not of this world, because he was not of this world (John 18:36), and by extension, neither would be his people, who were to become citizens of a new kingdom (John 17:1), after his death and resurrection and the coming of the Holy Spirit.

Those who repented would be set free from sin, by the blood of Christ and the grace of God, and they would be given the gift of eternal life. Unrepentant citizens of Satan’s kingdom, however, would remain in sin, whose end is death (Rom 6:20-23).

Jesus prayed to the Father for the church (the spiritual body of believers): “They are not of the world, just as I am not of the world” (John 17:16). Through belief, repentance, the waters of baptism and the laying on of hands, they would be transformed into a new creation, with a constant renewing of the mind (Rom 6:2-5; 2 Cor 4:16; Gal 2:20; Acts 8:17-18).

“Therefore, if anyone is in Christ, he is a new creation; old things have passed away; behold, all things have become new.” (2 Cor 5:17)

The devil would have had suspicions as to why God came to earth as a man. Yes, Satan did know the Scriptures, but so did the Jews, and they believed that Messiah would destroy the Roman occupation and restore the physical kingdom of Israel when He arrived. The devil may well have come to the same conclusion. After all, a person cannot understand the Scriptures unless God Himself opens their mind (Luke 24:45). The devil had tried to destroy the Christ child, but to no avail.

Later he attempted to deceptively bargain with Jesus – if He submitted to him, the devil would give Him all the kingdoms of the world there and then. When this also failed, he had Jesus persecuted, prosecuted, tortured and killed. How Satan must have revelled in his ability to put to death the Son of God, but in an astounding twist he had not anticipated, it was Christ who was triumphant!

The devil had not *taken* Jesus' life; rather He had laid down His life *voluntarily* and had thus claimed victory over sin and death – and the works of the devil (John 10:18; 1 John 3:8).

Ultimately, Satan had overstepped his realm of authority by killing Jesus (John 14:30). Consequently, the devil was held liable and sentenced to be condemned (Matt 25:41).

Sometime around Jesus' death (perhaps afterwards), Satan would have become aware that his appointment as ruler of this world was coming to an end and that he himself had been condemned, and his wrath would have been very great indeed!

The Kingdom Has Begun

Nothing like this had happened in the history of the creation. God had become a man and a servant of no reputation, humbling himself being obedient to death on the Cross. Having been sinless and victorious over sin and death and having “disarmed principalities and powers... triumphing over them”, Christ had been resurrected and “highly exalted” and given a name above all names (Col 2:14-15). So that every knee should bow to him in heaven and on earth, and every tongue confess Jesus Christ is Lord to the glory of God the Father (Phil 2:7-11).

Christ's sacrificial blood had opened the way for man to be released from the bondage of sin and the rule of the devil in this world. People could now be forgiven by God. Those who repent would receive his Holy Spirit and the gift of eternal life (Acts 13:48). They would be given God's grace under the rulership of Christ– the Lord of heaven and earth (Matt 28:18; Acts 17:24).

They would love God's righteous commandments more than the finest gold and become a royal priesthood (Ps 119: 127; 1 Pet 2:9) – in its fledgling form, on the earth – beginning as small as a mustard seed.

“If you were of the world, the world would love its own. Yet because *you are not of the world*, but I chose you out of the world, therefore the world hates you.” (John 15:19)

The Catholic Church claims *it* is the kingdom of God on earth and that this kingdom will grow until all the earth is at peace. This is false. But the kingdom of God *has* begun on earth – among the *ekklēsia*– “the whole body of Christians scattered throughout the earth”. This body of people is sometimes referred to as the “invisible church” – ie. repentant, committed and obedient believers who have His Spirit and are only known to God. This is in contrast to the “visible church” – that is, institutionalised church organisations and their multitudes of attendees. Jesus described this in the Parable of the Wheat and the Tares (Matt 13:24-30). And he taught the people saying, “Not everyone who says to Me, ‘Lord, Lord,’ shall enter the kingdom of heaven, but he who does the will of My Father in heaven” (Matt 7:21).

These people have been commissioned by God to preach the gospel to all nations (1 Cor 15:3-6; John 3:16; Rom 8:3-4). In this way, they will prepare the way for the King of kings and Lord of lords who will return and dispose of the devil and set up God's kingdom on earth, bringing about world peace (Isaiah 11; Rev 20). “If I cast out devils by the Spirit of God, then the kingdom of God is come to you” (Matt 12:28).

The Devil is Defeated

The devil had attained the title of a temporary office “ruler of the world” through dishonest means. The Most High could have legitimately destroyed him (thrown him into a lake of fire) after he sinned and had deceptively taken the position of “god [vice regent] of the world” from man. The Lord was under no obligation to give him, or allow him, to continue to hold that position for thousands of years. God owed Satan nothing. And God immediately condemned him and his fate was sealed (Gen 3:14-15; Is 14:15; Eze 28:17-18).

Nevertheless, God allowed the devil to hold onto his ill-begotten booty, because it served His greater purpose – for the testing of man (and angels). But Christ will not replace the devil by taking over his worldly throne, which is a seat of deception and lies, run in opposition to the government of God. “Shall the throne of iniquity, which devises evil by law, Have fellowship with You?” (Ps 94:20). Rather, at the designated time, Christ, the only *ruler of the EARTH*, will do away with Satan’s position and seat of power as “ruler of this **WORLD**”.

“He frustrates the devices of the crafty, So that their hands cannot carry out their plans. He catches the wise in their own craftiness, And the counsel of the cunning comes quickly upon them. They meet with darkness in the daytime, And grope at noontime as in the night.” (Job 5:12-14; 2 Tim 3:8-9)

The tables turned on the devil when Christ fulfilled His mission on earth (Zech 14:9). He was defeated in a way he could never have imagined.

*The gap creation gospel message, proclaimed by some churches (such as the one I attended), which claims Jesus had to qualify as a sinless human so He could save the world by replacing the devil on the **throne of the earth**, is seriously flawed!* Jesus did not have to qualify over the devil for anything (putting God in an inferior position to the devil). Rather, He came to live a life in complete submission to the Father and to die for our transgressions. Only then could death be swallowed up in victory. In this way, He would destroy the works of the devil, the one who once had the power of death (Matt 28:18; 1 Cor 15:54; Heb 2:14-15).

Just prior to his arrest in the Garden of Gethsemane, Jesus’s soul was exceedingly sorrowful and distressed. In prayer to his Father in Heaven he asked– not once, but three times – if it were possible to remove the great burden that was to be placed on him.

And it is no wonder Jesus uttered these words. The Romans had designed crucifixion to be the most humiliating, torturous and painful form of death known to man.

They used a flagrum, which is a type of whip, to rip off ribbons of flesh. Muscles turned to pulp and arteries and veins were laid bare. Sometimes the flagrum would connect to the abdomen, ripping it away so the intestines would spill out. The nails for the cross would go through the median nerve on the arms, holding up the body and incapacitating the hands – and much more.

Jesus, our Creator, knew intimately how much every fibre of his body would suffer. Not only that but Scripture tells us, “His appearance was marred more than any man” and his form beyond human likeness (Is 52:14). What person would not want to avoid such a death?

“I am poured out like water, And all My bones are out of joint; My heart is like wax; It has melted within Me. ... For dogs have surrounded Me; The congregation of the wicked has enclosed Me. They pierced My hands and My feet; I can count all My bones. They look [and] stare at Me. They divide My garments among them, And for My clothing they cast lots (Ps 22:14, 16-18)

Nevertheless, and this is the whole point! Jesus did not seek his own will but that of his Father’s (Matt 26: 39, 42,44), because there was no other way to pay the price for human sin to redeem mankind from the curse of death. That is why God takes sin so seriously, and why we should, too!

Jesus Becomes the Epitome of Sin

What happened on Calvary is inconceivable to a mere human being. When Jesus – the last Adam – hung on the Cross, the Father would transfer onto him the impossible weight of every single sin – great and small, past, present and future – committed since the creation of man and to the return of Christ!

Jesus was literally going to be made sin for us. He would suffer emotional, spiritual and mental agony, and he would experience physical horrors and the moral guilt of being the embodiment of all sin before a holy God.

Furthermore, at the time of Jesus's greatest need, the Father had to turn away – because Jesus became the epitome of sin, the curse and unrighteousness (2 Cor 5:21; Gal 3:13). Thus total separation entered their relationship and became a reality for the first time ever, as there can be no unity between the holy and the profane (Eze 44:23; Eze 22:26).

At the crucifixion, Jesus, who was sinless, took all the sins of mankind and became sin for us, so that we could be forgiven and reconciled to our Creator. And all because God loves us more than we could imagine and wants us to spend eternity with him:

“For God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have everlasting life. For God did not send His Son into the world to condemn the world, but that the world through Him might be saved.” (John 3:16-17)

“For I am persuaded that neither death nor life, nor angels nor principalities nor powers, nor things present nor things to come, nor height nor depth, nor any other created thing, shall be able to separate us from the love of God which is in Christ Jesus our Lord.” (Rom 8:38-39)

After Jesus's death, the devil's office as the ruler of this world was overturned. He would no longer have power over death, and the time would come when he would have no subjects to rule and thus no kingdom (spiritual realm) to govern. But until Christ returns, the “world” would remain under the “**prince of this world**”; the “prince of the power of the air” (John 14:30; Eph 2:2).

Without a doubt, learning of these events would have enraged Satan more than any other event in the history of creation.

Knowing he had lost his throne of power (death) and his time was short, he would have been furious! So did he ascend into heaven to do battle with God at this time? Interestingly, there is *no Scripture*, which I can find, that says Satan *actually* ascended into heaven and engaged God in battle; **rather it was in his heart and mind** – “in his dreams” or “imagination”, so to speak:

“For you have said in your heart; ‘I will ascend into heaven; I will exalt my throne above the stars of God. I will also sit on the mount of the congregation on the farthest sides of the north; I will ascend above the heights of the clouds, I will be like the most High.’” (Is 14:13-14).

“I Saw Satan Fall Like Lightning”

As Satan never actually exalted his throne above the angels of God, nor did he sit on the mount of the congregation in the north, where God's throne is, nor did he ever become like the Most High, this may well have been in his mind *but not have happened at all*, because that kind of power was out of his domain and authority, which was restricted to the earth. (Remember, the devil could not even lay one hand on Job's oxen without God's permission; Job 1:9-12.) This limitation of the devil's rule, authority and powers is confirmed in Psalm 24:3. “The earth is the Lord's, and the fullness thereof; the world, and they that dwell therein ... Who shall ascend into the hill of the Lord? or who shall stand in his holy place?” It is also confirmed in the Book of Revelation, which tells us that it is **Christ** who rules over the nations – not Satan. “... Jesus Christ, the faithful witness, the firstborn from the dead, and the **ruler over the kings of the earth**...” (Rev 1:5).

And in Jeremiah 27:1-8, God sends messages to the kings of Edom, Moab, Ammon, Tyre, Sidon and Judah that he has “given all these lands into the hand of Nebuchadnezzar the king of Babylon, my servant; and the beasts of the field I have also given him to serve him.” God then says He will punish any nations that does not serve Nebuchadnezzar for His appointed time.”

In contrast what we *do* read about the devil is: “On ***your belly*** you shall go, and you shall ***eat dust*** all the days of your life” (Gen 3:14). “Your pomp is brought you ***down*** to Sheol... you are ***fallen*** from heaven... you are ***cut down*** to the ground... you shall be ***brought down to*** Sheol, to the ***lowest depths*** of the Pit” (Is 14:11-15). “I ***cast you*** as a profane thing ***out*** of the mountain of God; I ***cast you to the ground***” (Eze 28:16-17). “Now the ruler of this world will be ***cast out***” (John 12:31). “I saw Satan ***fall*** like lightning from heaven” (Luke 10:18).

This would also see the fulfilment of God’s curse upon him— that he would “eat dust all the days of his life” (**Gen 3:14**). That is, all his plans would never come to fruition, so he will never be satisfied.

“A great fiery dragon... His tail drew a third of the stars of heaven and ***threw them to the earth***... A war broke out in heaven: Michael and his angels fought with the dragon; and the dragon and his angels fought, but they ***did not prevail, nor was a place found for them in heaven any longer***. So the great dragon was ***cast out***, that serpent of old, called the Devil and Satan... he was ***cast to the earth***, and his angels were ***cast out*** with him.” (Rev 12)

There seems to be a lot about casting the devil out but nothing about him *actually* ascending.

Also, many Scriptures tell us, “The time has come” (John 12:23-24; 1 Pet 4:17; Mark 1:15), and that it is God – not Satan – who determines appointed times and boundaries (Acts 17:26). Considering all this – and knowing God is in total control, but the devil likes us to think he is – the only conclusion I can come to is that Satan never ascended into heaven in a coup d’état at all. Rather, he was in complete subjection to God and everything was going to the Almighty’s plan. After all, when Pilate told Jesus he had the power to crucify him, “Jesus answered, ‘You could have no power at all against Me unless it had been given you from above’” (John 19:11).

The Devil’s Fury

During the time of the old covenant, the devil still had access to heaven (Job 1:6) but God now determined the time had come that he should be cast out, never to return (Rev 12). And Jesus said he saw it happen, not long before his death (John 12:1-31).

This scenario would mean the devil was already in heaven at the time and it was *God who took the initiative* to remove his freedom/command to visit the heavenly realm, and He banished him for good, by casting him to the earth, where he still had jurisdiction for a time.

And God tells us how it happened, in Rev 12:7-9. The devil did not ascend and attack God and the angels – rather, “War broke out **IN** heaven”. And it was Michael and his angels who began the expulsion and “**the dragon and his angels fought back**. But he was not strong enough, and **they lost their place in heaven**” (NIV).

The devil seemed astounded by this turn of events, because “when the dragon **saw he had been hurled to the earth**” he was furious (v12-13).

As for the fallen angels, they may have all been with the devil at this time, although that would mean that none were on earth. So it makes more sense that they were all cast out by decree, whether they were there or not. God gave the order for the devil and his angels to be thrown out of heaven, “because *Satan was overcome with the blood of the Lamb*”.

As a consequence, a great battle erupted in heaven, because the devil did not want to lose that privilege, where he could vent his opinions and accuse God’s people.

Now Christ’s followers were to come under a new jurisdiction – a new covenant with a new King – and thus no place in heaven was found for the devil any longer (Rev 12:8). That privilege had now

taken away from him. Clearly Revelation 12:7-13 is not a description of Satan *ascending into* heaven to attack God but of him being *thrown out*.

The devil's expulsion from heaven appears, from Scripture (Luke 10:18; John 12:31), to have occurred just prior to Christ's death and resurrection, and before the devil understood what was going on. After all, God often makes pronouncements prior to an event (because He has already decreed them), so Christ's death and man's salvation had already occurred in this sense (Is 53).

After Satan was cast out, he was banned from ever returning to heaven again.

"So the great dragon was cast out, that serpent of old, called the Devil and Satan, who deceives the whole world; he was cast to the earth, and his angels were cast out with him. Then I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, 'Now salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of His Christ have come, for the accuser of our brethren, who accused them before our God day and night, has been cast down'." (Rev 12:9-10)

No longer could he appear before God's throne with his lies and accusations against His people (Rev 12:9-10). He could accuse God's people on earth, through his human subjects and human authorities, but not before God in heaven. (These people were to become citizens of a new kingdom – His kingdom; Phil 3:20; Matt 12:28.)

Now, Jesus Christ the righteous would be sitting at the right hand of the Father, continuously, as their Intercessor and Advocate – intervening on their behalf for their sins to be pardoned, because He is the Atonement for their sins. Not only that but one day all the nations of the earth would be the Lord's inheritance and citizens of His kingdom, too (Ps 82:8).

"My little children, these things I write to you, so that you may not sin. And if anyone sins, we have an Advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous. And He Himself is the propitiation for our sins, and not for ours only but also for the whole world. Now by this we know that we know Him, if we keep His commandments." (1 John 2:1-3)

Satan Enters Judas

The devil's fury at being thrown out of heaven would have been intense and so he turned his attention to destroying Jesus (the Messiah). Satan began by "entering Judas" who "went his way and conferred with the chief priests and captains how he might betray Him to them" (Luke 22:3-4). No wonder Jesus poured out his heart to the Father in the Garden of Gethsemane, "praying in agony" so that "His sweat became like great drops of blood falling down to the ground" (Luke 22:44). Jesus knew full well what was coming – an event like nothing else in the history of the world.

The Son of God would be given into the hands of the devil for a short time. Jesus would be betrayed, scorned, abused, accused, tortured, beaten beyond recognition and horrifically murdered. On top of this, he would have all the sins of the world placed upon his shoulders. The devil had never before been granted such a level of power and he used it to the full – and God's anguish had never been greater.

"Now when the sixth hour had come, there was darkness over the whole land until the ninth hour. And at the ninth hour Jesus cried out with a loud voice, saying, 'Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani?' which is translated, 'My God, My God, why have You forsaken Me?'" (Mark 15:33-34)

After Christ voluntarily fulfilled his mission on earth, great supernatural activity sent by the Father broke out – the sky turned black, there were earthquakes, the temple veil was rent from the top to the bottom, graves opened and the sleeping bodies of believers awoke and went into the city and appeared to many (Mark 27:51-54).

At some point, probably at the resurrection, the devil came to the realisation that Jesus had not planned to set up his kingdom over all the earth at that time, at all. Rather, the kingdom of God was a spiritual kingdom, commencing with the first century church – beginning as small as a “mustard seed”. Now, perhaps, the devil became aware for the first time of the incredible plan of God – that mankind could be forgiven and saved from their sins. Killing Jesus had not destroyed God’s plan at all; it has facilitated it!

The devil had been outwitted and now he turned his wrath against God’s people to “make war with the saints”. These people, who were no longer part of Satan’s kingdom, were spreading the gospel message, which would bring even more people into God’s kingdom (Dan 7:21; Rev 13:7). The devil knew his time was short and he was enraged (Rev 12:12)! And so his persecution against Christians began. Stephen, a disciple full of faith and power, was one of the earliest martyrs (Acts 6:5). And by 64AD, the first state-sponsored terror campaign directed against Christians was conducted by one of the most debased of all emperors, Nero.

Over the last 2000 years, millions of believers have died for their faith (and are still suffering, being imprisoned and tortured, and dying today in many parts of the world). And the devil’s masterstroke has been to utilise the power not only of governments but also certain church organisations to inflict this persecution. (Refer to Resources section on this website.)

Biblical Timeline

The Book of Revelation is about the end times – the last 2000 years after the birth of the church and the beginning of the kingdom of God. It explains the devil’s continued wrath against God’s people, and the escalating events of the latter days as his reign draws towards the end. That is why Satan hates the *ekklesia*, because they are not part of his kingdom nor subject to his rule any more, as the world is (1 John 5:19).

“Therefore rejoice, O heavens, and you who dwell in them! Woe to the inhabitants of the earth and the sea! For the devil has come down to you, having great wrath, because he knows that he has a short time.” (Rev 12:12)

But in the midst of persecution, the Lord would be with his people, to comfort and sustain them. He promised to never test them more than they could bear and their reward for enduring would be great (1 Cor 10:13; Rev 5:10).

Nevertheless, the devil is so corrupted and twisted, he still thinks he can win this battle and retain his position on earth (Rev 17:14), but he will be totally vanquished.

With regard to Isaiah 14, much seems to be prophetic, about the millennium: “The whole earth is at rest, and is quiet: they break forth into singing” (v 7). And verses 12-15 also fit into the beginning of the millennium setting:

“How you have fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! How you have been cut down to the ground, **you who weakened the nations**. For you have said in your heart:... ‘I will ascend above the heights of the clouds, I will be like the Most High.’ Yet you **shall be** brought down to Sheol, to the lowest depths of the Pit.” (Is 14:12-15)

In other words, Satan desired to be like God, *however*, he was cast down to the lowest depths.

In gap creation, these verses are said to refer to Satan being thrown out of heaven after he declared war against God during the (unbiblical) “initial creation”. But what possible “nations” could Satan have “weakened” in the context of a previous earth? Especially when we consider that the Hebrew word for “nations” (*gowy*) means “People, usually of non-Hebrew people, of descendants of

Abraham, of Israel”. Also, “you shall be brought down to Sheol” is written in the future tense. This is confirmed in the Book of Revelation, which describes the devil’s condemnation and sentence.

“Then I saw an angel coming down from heaven, having the key to the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. He laid hold of the dragon, that serpent of old, who is the Devil and Satan, and bound him for a thousand years; and he cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal on him, so that he should **deceive the nations no more** till the thousand years were finished. But after these things he must be released for a little while.” (Rev 21:1-3)

My explanation of when and how the devil was cast to the earth is not set in concrete, and I may go back and change things over time, as my understanding grows. But it does show how a biblical event line, including *all* aspects of Satan, his rebellion, sin and evil, fits more easily into a young earth creation worldview than a convoluted gap theory narrative that relies on terms not found in the Bible.

I have asked several gap creationists for a similar creation narrative or event line, supported with Scriptures, but no one has been willing or able to do so. I wish they would, because they would immediately see it is utter confusion, as I did myself when I attempted to put all the bits together.

The Devil’s Powers Embellished

In short: **gap creationism** attributes Satan with imaginary powers over a great period of time, in which all his devilish achievements are said to have taken place. Not only that but it is Satan who is the initiator of war against God – at least twice.

And, according to some gap creationists, the gospel message is to proclaim that Christ had to “qualify” as a human (so as to replace the first human, Adam, who failed) in order to take over Satan’s position as *ruler of the earth – rendering the redemption of mankind as secondary*.

Not all gap creationists believe this, but it all goes to show just how far a seriously flawed doctrine can lead a believer away from the heart of the true gospel message and into fables.

In contrast, **young earth creation** exposes the devil as a liar, murderer and coward from the beginning of creation, not having the capability to do anything outside of God’s supreme jurisdiction. At the heart of *this* gospel message, God has always held the title of *Lord of heaven and earth* (Acts 17:24) and he didn’t have to *qualify* for anything – especially for a seat of devilish power. Rather Jesus voluntarily came to earth for one purpose – to humble himself in obedience to the Father, live a righteous life, and take upon himself all the sins of the world at the Cross. Thus he would pay the price for man’s sins and redeem him from the sentence of death.

As Christ has claimed victory over sin and death, the devil’s office as “god of the evil systems of this world” will eventually have run its course and he will be disposed of.

“Grace to you and peace from God the Father and our Lord Jesus Christ, who gave Himself for our sins, that He might deliver us from this present evil age, according to the will of our God and Father.” (Gal 1:3-4).

If this is what happened, it would mean that God’s sovereignty reigns unabated and supreme, and Satan’s power and authority have always been limited, because he is unable to do anything outside of God’s purpose and will – on earth or in heaven – something else the devil doesn’t want us to know.

The Crucifixion Changed Everything

God divorced the nation of Israel when they were sent into Assyrian captivity. His covenant with the nation of Judah continued for another 740 years. After the death of Christ on the Cross, this old covenant ended. On the death of a spouse one is free to re-marry, according to God’s law. Now, after his death and resurrection, Christ could legally make a new covenant with a new people – not

restricted to a particular people group this time, but based on the promises made to Abraham. Christ was the “seed” through whom all the nations would be blessed (Gen 22:18).

Thus the new covenant had begun – a better covenant with better promises (Heb 8:6-8,13). The accuser of God’s people, the devil, was cast out and banned from visiting heaven ever again. Instead God’s people would have a Mediator and Advocate – Jesus Christ, the righteous – who would bring their petitions to the Father (Heb 12:24; 1 Jo 2:1).

God’s people were now freed from the ruler of this world and his [spiritual] kingdom, to become citizens of a new kingdom – the kingdom of God, under their new King – Messiah (Phil 3:20).

The old covenant delivered an external set of regulations, observances, sacrifices and laws to a called-out people - the children of Israel. God was their Benefactor. Following these ordinances made the people holy in his sight and he blessed and protected them accordingly. But it was an inferior covenant that could not change their hearts of stone (Eze 36:26; 11:19; Jer 31:33; Heb 8:10). Under the new covenant, however, faithful believers would be governed internally by God’s Holy Spirit and the law of love and righteousness would rule their hearts of flesh. (John 13:34-35; John 14:15).

“Owe no one anything except to love one another, for he who loves another has fulfilled the law. ... Love does no harm to a neighbour; therefore love is the fulfillment of the law” (Rom 13:8,10).

FOOTER SECTION

“He is despised and rejected by men, A Man of sorrows and acquainted with grief. And we hid, as it were, our faces from Him; He was despised, and we did not esteem Him. Surely He has borne our griefs And carried our sorrows; Yet we esteemed Him stricken, Smitten by God, and afflicted.”
(Is 53:3-4)

“He was oppressed and He was afflicted, Yet He opened not His mouth; He was led as a lamb to the slaughter, And as a sheep before its shearers is silent, So He opened not His mouth.” (Is 53:7)

“For dogs have surrounded Me; The congregation of the wicked has enclosed Me. They pierced My hands and My feet; I can count all My bones. They look and stare at Me.” (Ps 22:16-17)

“Behold, My Servant shall deal prudently; He shall be exalted and extolled and be very high. Just as many were astonished at you, So His visage was marred more than any man, And His form more than the sons of men...” (Is 52:13-14)

*“For we know that the whole creation groans and labors with birth pangs together until now.”
(Rom 8:22)*

CHAPTER 5

How Did Evil Develop?

SYNOPSIS: Is animal suffering a consequence of evil? How can a loving God create a world full of biological life forms that suffer calamity, pain, adversity and affliction? – Is this God’s preferred biological design, in two creations? – What part has the devil played?

According to the gap theory, the earth existed for billions of years *before* God made man, who sinned and, as a consequence, brought death and decay into the world. Such a scenario, if it were true, shows that suffering and death existed in the physical realm of the “original creation” prior to man; thus it cannot be connected to man’s sin and the curse. This is because it has always been there from the beginning (billions of years ago), when God created the heavens and the earth and all things in them. Consequently, by extension, it goes to reason that pain, anguish and death in *this* creation (the so-called “re-creation”) also has nothing to do with sin, except in the case of man.

And Satan can’t be blamed for all this cruelty and waste in the “initial creation”, either. This is because, according to gap creation, Satan’s fall took place at the *end* of a particular geological age, which brought about the *end* of all life through the total destruction of everything on the planet. Thus, in this worldview, the suffering and death of *nephesh* (lung-breathing, sentient creatures), as it has been preserved in the fossil record, was not a consequence of any curse in the “initial creation”, but part of God’s natural creative biological purpose for billions of creatures over billions of years.

This is also how gap creationists view the suffering and death of animals in the “re-creation” – occurring naturally. But such a scenario would mean that God himself had intentionally instituted an ages-long ecological system of disease, decay, pain, violence, predatory behaviour, carnivory and death on the ancient earth.

This is *exactly* what some gap creationists have told me, and it is somewhat consistent, philosophically – *but not biblical, as it paints a very different character to that revealed in the God of the Bible.*

This is a serious dilemma and I have yet to find any gap theorist prepared to admit the consequences of their chosen historical worldview.

And so I would suggest to any person who had superficially adopted the gap theory narrative to start considering its far-reaching implications! It is simply not good enough to follow a doctrine without knowing exactly what it teaches.

“Be diligent to present yourself approved to God, a worker who does not need to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth.” (2 Tim 2:15)

Adam’s Sin Only Affected Man?

One of the arguments put forward to support this is that gap creationists interpret Rom 5:12 as meaning that the curse of death, through Adam’s sin, only affected man, not beast. “Wherefore, as by one man’s sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned.” (Rom 5:12)

In Romans 5, the apostle Paul is explaining how evil followed the sin of the first man, Adam, which brought death into the world. Here Paul *is* specifically speaking of man, because his message is the good news that although condemnation and death have reigned on earth through one man's sin, and all men will die as a consequence, God's grace and the gift of eternal life will also reign through one man – Jesus Christ the righteous. In this context, Paul is focusing on man's relationship with Christ and man's eternal life. After all, the blood of Christ does not redeem the animal kingdom.

However, this verse (or chapter) does not *specifically* say that man's sin *only* brought death to man and *not* to all the inhabitants of the earth.

Such a conclusion is an extrapolation that cannot be determined from the text and context. To find the correct message here is to not read it in isolation, but to see if the interpretation fits all other Scriptures relating to the subject. If not, it is an incomplete reading.

For example in Acts 16:31 we are instructed to “believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and you will be saved, you and your household”. This is correct, but it is not the full message and must be read in conjunction with other Scriptures, such as Acts 2:36-38 and John 14:15; John 6:46 that tell us that repentance and baptism are also required by each individual, and if we call Christ Lord then we must obey his commandments. In other words one does not *nullify* the other; it *expands* upon it. Below I review some of the Scriptures that expand upon God's character as the Good Shepherd who has laid down his life for the sheep - mankind (John 10:11-14). Not only that, but God also loves the whole creation.

Sin, Evil and the Goodness of God

In the Bible “evil” has a number of meanings. In Hebrew evil (*ra*) includes “giving pain, unhappiness, misery, sad, hurtful, distress, injury, calamity, adversity, affliction, grief, harm and sorrow”. And in Greek evil (*ponēros*) includes anything that causes “harassment, annoyances, hardships, perils, pain and trouble, disease and blindness”. These words by definition describe a fallen world that has been cursed to suffer – morally, emotionally, mentally, spiritually, ethically and physically! In other words, the entire animal kingdom (including man) has been subjected to the evil of suffering after the curse.

Either something represents God or it represents the devil. There is nothing in between. Nevertheless, according to gap creationism, the “distress, injury, disease, perils, pain and harm” experienced by animals is not evil, it is God's chosen biological design. But how can God be responsible for, and approving of, all that anguish and adversity in the physical creation, which he deemed “exceedingly good”? For example, the suffering of animals – such as an antelope's terror and pain as a lion's fangs rip into her neck – is as real as ours. (Or, in the area where we live, the night-time bloodcurdling screams of a possum being torn apart alive by a powerful owl is deeply distressing, for the possum and everything that has to listen to it.)

Does such a bloodthirsty predatory system really describe the character of the God of the Bible?

Our Creator instructs man to be tender-hearted and considerate to all creatures.

“If a bird's nest happens to be before you along the way, in any tree or on the ground, with young ones or eggs, with the mother sitting on the young or on the eggs, you shall not take the mother with the young; you shall surely let the mother go, and take the young for yourself, that it may be well with you and that you may prolong your days.” (Deut 22:6-7)

God defines himself as compassionate and gracious, longsuffering, and abundant in goodness, mercy, loving kindness and truth (Ex 34:6; Ps 86:15). His wisdom is compelling and his judgments indisputable.

The Creator of all things tells man that if he is to be righteous then he must have regard for the life of his animals; those who don't are called wicked and cruel (Pro 12:10). God instructs man not to muzzle the ox while he is threshing the grain (Deut 25:4); to care for his flocks (Pro 27:23); not to ignore an animal in distress on a Sabbath, because it is a day of rest (Luke 14:5); to carry the lambs and gently lead nursing ewes (Is 40:11); not to plough with a donkey yoked to an ox (Deut 22:10); and he says he provides for the birds and every living creature, because he cares for even the little sparrows (Ps 84:3; Luke 12:6-7; Ps 36:6). Not only that but God himself tells us that this whole world has been cursed. In Gen 3:14, God said to the serpent after he'd led man into sin:

"Because you have done this, You are cursed more than all cattle, And more than every beast of the field; On your belly you shall go, And you shall eat dust All the days of your life." (Gen 3:14)

That is, the devil was cursed **over and above** the animal kingdom. And so, the suffering and death of animals was the result of a "curse" from God – the collateral damage from the fall-out of sin – not His biological design of preference. Rom 8:22 describes this state of "the whole creation (*pass ktisis*)" as in "the bondage of corruption", which "groans (*systemazo*) and travails (*synodino*) in pain together".

In fact, the first record we have of death in the creation is just after the curse, when God slew a lamb to provide clothing for the man and woman after they sinned and were ashamed of their nakedness. Thus the first shedding of blood was a direct consequence of sin (Gen 3:21).

The Greek expression here is that the whole creation "individually and collectively", "anything created, the sum or aggregate of things created" is "experiencing a common calamity", "undergoing agony together" and "moaning jointly". This is clear in light of Is 11:6-9 and Is 65:25, where God reveals what it will be like when Messiah rules the earth (Rev 21:3-5). He describes how the wolf, the lamb, the leopard, the lion, the cow, the bear, the ox, the snake and the child "*shall not hurt nor destroy* in my holy mountain" (which is *not* what we find in the fossil record).

God Hates Cruelty and Waste

God is described as infinite love who hates cruelty, destruction and waste of any kind (Ps 145:9). Yet gap creationism sees God as having elected a biological system that is wasteful, brutal and agonising for all animals, which he deemed "exceedingly good". As for Adam, it is said that his sin brought about suffering and death to man only. In this way, gap creationism attributes a smaller role to sin (having only affected man and maybe the earth) and evil as being less extensive (i.e. excluding the pain and death of animals). It also has a diminished view of God's goodness, as evident in the "naturally" suffering and dying creation all around us.

From the young earth creation perspective, however, the consequence of man's sin, under the devil's rulership, is far more comprehensive than that, seen as having affected the entire planet and everything on it.

"For the creation was subjected to futility, not willingly, but because of Him who subjected it in hope; because the creation itself also will be delivered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God. For we know that the whole creation groans and labors with birth pangs together until now." (Rom 8:20-22)

This is the heart of the gospel: that Jesus came to earth to die for man's sins, so we could be released from spiritual bondage, forgiven and receive the gift of eternal life. And that Christ will return – victorious, triumphant and with great glory. This good news is to be taken throughout the world.

"And as it is appointed for men to die once, but after this the judgment, so Christ was offered once to bear the sins of many. To those who eagerly wait for Him He will appear a second time, apart from sin, for salvation." (Heb 9:27-28)

“And there will be signs in the sun, in the moon, and in the stars; and on the earth distress of nations, with perplexity, the sea and the waves roaring; Men’s hearts failing them from fear and the expectation of those things which are coming on the earth, for the powers of the heavens will be shaken. And then they will see the Son of Man coming in a cloud with power and great glory.” (Luke 21:25-27)

Then, Christ will usher in the glorious kingdom of God **in its fullness**, under His reign, delivering the whole creation from bondage. This is the premillennial view, because peace in all the earth has not yet happened. He will also restore the creation, at very least, to its original, magnificent paradisaical state, where everything was “exceedingly good” and ALL creatures were provided herbs to eat (Gen 1:31; Gen 1:29-30). This was a created order that we have no concept of understanding in our present fallen state.

“The wolf also shall dwell with the lamb, The leopard shall lie down with the young goat, The calf and the young lion and the fatling together; And a little child shall lead them. The cow and the bear shall graze; Their young ones shall lie down together; And the lion shall eat straw like the ox. ... They shall not hurt nor destroy in all My holy mountain, **For the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the LORD As the waters cover the sea.**” (Is 11:6-7, 9)

When the disciples asked Jesus how they should pray, he told them:

“So He said to them, ‘When you pray, say: Our Father in heaven, Hallowed be Your name. Your kingdom come. Your will be done On earth as it is in heaven.’” (Luke 11:2)

One day the Prince of Peace will return and establish his everlasting kingdom, where peace will be the rule rather than the exception. The Blue Letter Bible explains this well.

“When Jesus Christ came to earth the angels announced that there would be peace. Jesus is called the, ‘Prince of Peace’ yet there has been no peace for the world since He came. There are several reasons for this. First, the peace the angels promised were to those who have trusted Him - not to everyone. Believers can enjoy the peace of God. Second, Jesus Himself testified that His coming had the result of dividing people not uniting them. There will be peace on the earth but only when Christ returns.” (https://www.blueletterbible.org/faq/don_stewart/don_stewart_790.cfm)

As we read in Isaiah:

“For unto us a Child is born, Unto us a Son is given; And the government will be upon His shoulder. And His name will be called Wonderful, Counsellor, Mighty God, Everlasting Father, Prince of Peace. Of the increase of His government and peace. There will be no end, Upon the throne of David and over His kingdom, To order it and establish it with judgment and justice From that time forward, even forever. The zeal of the LORD of hosts will perform this.” (Is 9:6-7)

From the young earth creation perspective, any kind of anguish, fear, affliction, distress, death and grief (yes, animals can grieve) is considered the product of evil, a result of the curse. It is a complete departure from the goodness of God and his awe-inspiring original created order as described in Gen 1 and 2 – without an invisible backstory, and before the curse changed everything.

As such, each creation story mandates a fundamentally different understanding of God’s character, the magnitude of evil and the role of sin. This is a fact that CANNOT be ignored!

“Woe to those who call evil good, and good evil; Who put darkness for light, and light for darkness; Who put bitter for sweet, and sweet for bitter!” (Is 5:20)

“Where is the way to the dwelling of light? And darkness, where is its place, That you may take it to its territory, That you may know the paths to its home? Do you know it, because you were born then, Or because the number of your days is great?” (Job 38:19-21)

CHAPTER 6

Cosmology and the Age of the Earth

SYNOPSIS: How reliable are cosmological models? – The big bang controversy – Ninety-five percent of the universe is made up of hypothetical entities – Richard Dawkins loses university debate against young earth creationists – There is no scientific body of gap creationism – Young universe fits with Einstein’s theory of relativity – Young earth creation model fits with Scripture – The answer to starlight and time – What is eternity?

Most gap creationists believe the time period between the so-called “initial creation” and the “re-creation” lasted billions of years, bringing Genesis into line with the age of the earth according to secular science (e.g. evolutionary geology and evolutionary cosmology, etc). However, gap creationists do not accept biological evolution.

Those who believe in an ancient earth are convinced big bang theory is the best cosmological explanation we have. However, many secular scientists are, in fact, ‘Bucking the Big Bang’, as it has been called in a 2004 article in *New Scientist*, in favour of other astronomical models and explanations, such as **Stephen Hawking**’s M-theory (multi-verse theory), and **Roger Penrose** and **Vahe Gurzadyan**’s conformal cyclic cosmology, and there are others.

The point being that *all* cosmological theories about how the universe was formed are founded on a branch of theoretical physics that relies on many hypothetical entities which are suspiciously untrustworthy and plagued with uncertainties.

These cosmological philosophies at the macro level reflect the same speculative ideas at the nano level, in quantum physics, because they are branches of metaphysics based largely on mysteries. So when any person dismisses young earth explanations about the universe because they rely on speculation and conjecture, it also needs to be acknowledged that it is the same for *whatever* cosmological model is used, including the big bang, as no man was present to witness the beginning of the creation.

Examples of these hypothetical entities are dark matter and dark energy, which are said to make up 95 per cent of the universe according to big bang theory. Yet these entities, which have never been observed (and we don’t even know if they exist, for they are mysteries), are necessary in order to eliminate some of the contradictions inherent in its theory.

Science writer **Alexander Waugh** has stated in an article that these uncertainties are an intrinsic part of all branches of the origin sciences.

“Hawking can use his recondite algebra to the same effect as the ancient wise man used his literacy to gain authority over the illiterate masses.

“But will future generations look back on Hawking and his confreres of the late 20th and early 21st centuries as heroic Newtons and Einsteins, or with the same lofty condescension with which we now mock the augurs of Ancient Rome?” (‘A Plague of Infinities’, *The Spectator*, 11 September 2010)

In other words, we don't know if these apparently brilliant theoretical scientists have discovered truths or if they are communicating complete nonsense (based on imagination and mysticism) while wearing the mantle of "science".

I needed to explain that, because those who believe in the big bang, or any other ancient-earth theory, still rely (perhaps unaware) on the reasoning of these and other scientists who are expressing their own philosophies and opinions as to how the universe came into being and operates.

Problems with Secular Science

Although the gap theory rejects the concept of biological evolution, it still (ironically) believes that the scientific establishment is generally searching for truth, without being swayed by inherent prejudices and biases. This could not be further from reality – *for any individual!* In the case of scientists, they do not operate within a metaphysical vacuum but interpret all data, by necessity, through their own philosophical/religious worldview (the overwhelming majority being evolutionists), not just in biology and palaeontology, but also in cosmology and geology and all the other sciences making origin claims.

For example, no one in secular science would *ever* consider the creation (or the gap theory's "re-creation") could have been completed in six days, with man, and everything else, appearing instantaneously, fully formed and in a mature state. This means no scientist would *ever* pursue scientific inquiry from this perspective but would wilfully look for a *completely different* explanation. As such their foundation and models are entirely based on unbiblical errant human reasoning, which our Creator calls "philosophy and empty deceit, according to the traditions of men" (Col 2:8). And if any scientific enquiry today lent support to a six-day creation they would immediately abandon it, as it does not fit their evolutionary presuppositions. Also, the very thought that the Bible might be true would carry with it huge (and unwanted) spiritual and moral repercussions, too.

Unless, that is, they are young earth creationists whose scientific credentials and arguments are considered a real threat to ancient earth philosophers and the evolutionary paradigm.

This is why the scientific establishment attacks them so vehemently.

The Great Debate: Young Earth vs. Old Earth

An example of this is a debate held in 1986 at Oxford University, which pitted young earth creationist Professor A. E. Wilder-Smith against old-earth stalwart Professor Richard Dawkins.

Wilder-Smith had **Edgar Howard Andrews** on his team and **Richard Dawkins** had **John Maynard Smith** on his team. Among other accomplishments, Wilder-Smith (d. 1995) had three earned doctorates, was a fellow of the Royal Society of Chemistry, director of a Swiss pharmaceutical company and a NATO three-star general.

As for Edward Andrews, he had a DSc (higher doctorate) in applied physics. He wrote more than 100 research papers and scientific books, and he was a chartered engineer and chartered physicist (which indicated his high level of professional competence). The outcome of the debate? Wilder-Smith and Edgar Andrews won by 198 votes to 115! (Refer, Doug Sharp & Dr Jerry Bergman, *Persuaded by the Evidence*, pp 278-279.) This was in spite of the fact that most of those in attendance were staunch old-earthers and pro-evolutionists and it was conducted on Dawkins' own home territory, Oxford University.

Young-Earth and Gap Theory Science

Most people are ignorant when it comes to the number of scientists who hold to a young-earth creation view. There are at least 12 young earth creation science organisations in the world with hundreds of scientists with PhD or Masters degrees. (In 2013, The Korean Association of Creation

Research alone had around 500 PhD or MA degree voting members.) Some of these scientists have held professorships, are leaders in their scientific discipline, or been nominated for Nobel Prizes.

In fact, the majority of young earth creation scientists were evolutionists who came to realise the critical flaws in secular old-earth dating methods that are better explained in the context of a young earth and catastrophism.

One such scientist is **John Sanford**, who was a professor at the prestigious Cornell University for 25 years. He received his PhD in the area of plant breeding and plant genetics. (He still holds the title of Courtesy Professor at Cornell, indefinitely.) While at Cornell, he published more than 70 scientific publications and now holds more than 20 patents. He has also started two successful businesses derived from his research: Biolistics Inc and Sanford Scientific Inc.

Sanford was a pioneer of genetic engineering and inventor of the “gene gun”, which has prevented the starvation of millions of people in the developing world. Dr Sanford was an agnostic evolutionist and became a Christian well into his career. It was the evidence in his own field of genetics that persuaded him to be not only a creationist, but specifically a young-earth creationist.

Another such highly esteemed scientist (who sees no evidence for an ancient earth) is physician **Raymond Damadian**, who invented Magnetic Resonance Imaging (MRI). Among his honours, Damadian was awarded the National Medal of Technology, America’s highest award for applied science. He is also enrolled in the Inventor’s Hall of Fame. (Refer to **Jerry Bergman**’s book, *Persuaded by the Evidence*, for all of these and other examples. Also, see *Persuaded by the Evidence [for Creation]*, Part 1, Volume 1: <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=e3OihbyVKB4>.)

Now let us compare this to gap creation science – there is none!

This is because, as far as I know, there is no defending body of gap creation scientists in the world today. Thus, there are no public gap creation debates and no scientific papers being published! That is also why gap creationism clings to certain explanations provided by the evolutionary scientific community (e.g. “the age of dinosaurs” and the “age of man” – found nowhere in Scripture). Nevertheless, I know some gap creationists who are quick to poke fun at young earth scientists. I find that ironic!

Time Slows Down in a Gravity Well

With regard to cosmological models, there are a number based on a recent creation, all supported by Einstein’s theory of relativity, and they are just as plausible as old earth models. One such young earth theory, which was formulated by nuclear physicist and former atheist Dr **Russell Humphreys**, is white hole cosmology (Refer *Starlight & Time: Solving the Puzzle of Distant Starlight in a Young Universe*, DVD and book).

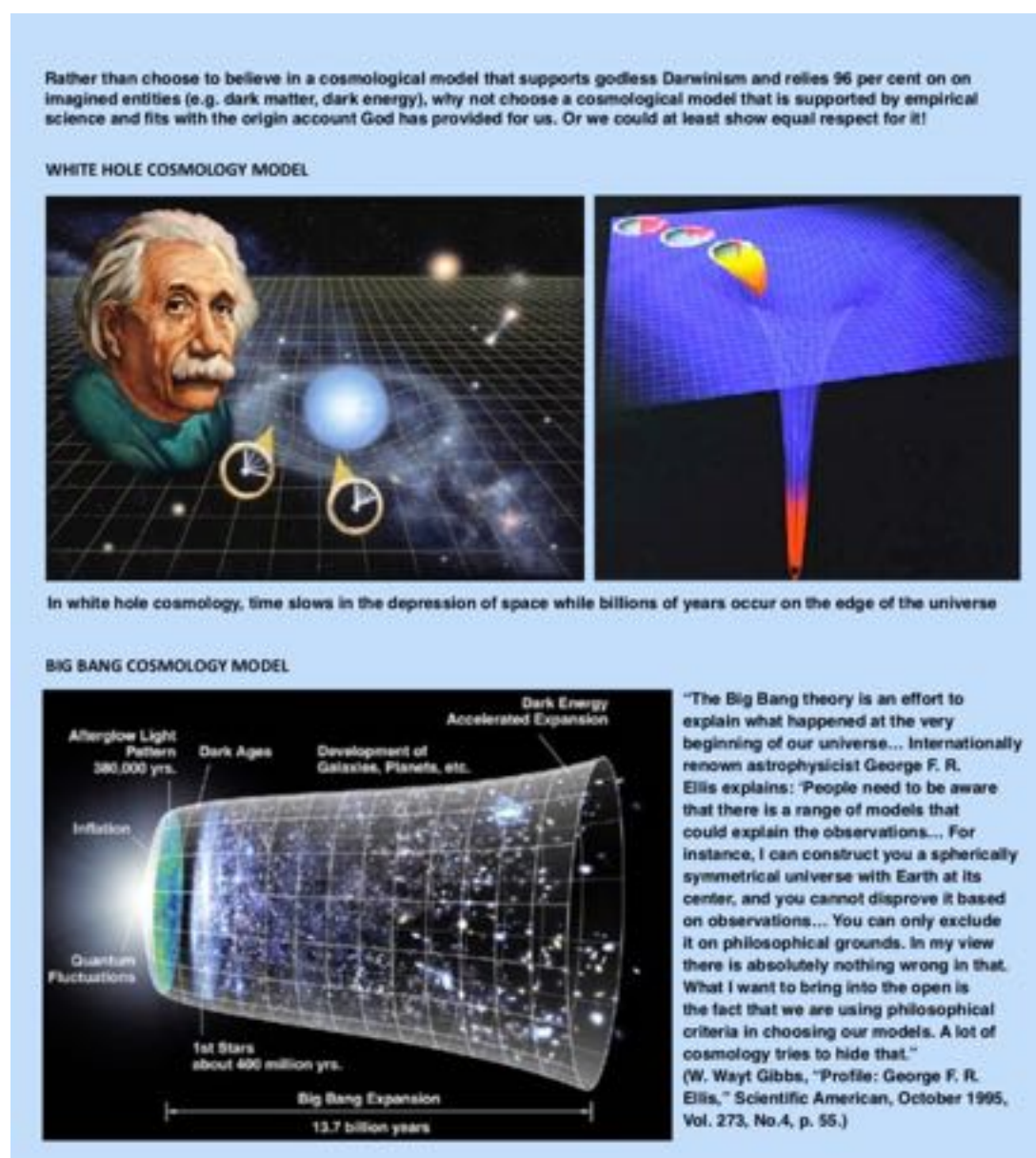
Humphreys renounced evolution and embraced young earth creation on the basis that he could find no evidence for an ancient earth.

Instead of starting with the arbitrary big bang premise – that the universe is infinite and uniform and has no centre (how can an explosion not have a centre?) – Humphreys began with the biblical premise that the universe is finite (Ps 147:4) and it has an edge (Is 40:22), and that the earth has a central position, spiritually (though not geometrically). After all, the earth occupies the central position in the universe because of its God-given role and the significance of mankind (Deut 10:14; Ps 8:4-8). And no other astronomical body is called God’s footstool (Acts 7:49).

As for evolutionary models, in which man and the earth are not viewed as specifically important, these ALL run *contrary to Scripture*.

Empirical science (which is observable, testable and repeatable under laboratory conditions) has proved that time slows down in a gravity well. An earthly example of this is the atomic clock, which is the most accurate chronometer invented by man. There are two atomic clocks in the world: one at sea level in Greenwich, England, and the other at Boulder, Colorado, 1524 metres (5000 feet) above sea level. Each of these clocks run at different rates, because the mass of the earth distorts space-time and produces a gravity well. This means that time in Greenwich runs slower than in Boulder – after one year there is a five-microsecond difference.

In Russell Humphreys' white hole cosmology, the earth is located within this deep depression of the fabric of space. Thus, millions of years of physical processes are occurring on the edge of the universe, while time on earth, deep within the gravity well, is ticking away measured in days (see diagram top right).



Some gap creationists agree with young earth creationists that God could have created starlight to reach the earth immediately at the time of creation. This makes sense not just in young earth creationism but also in old earth creationism, because if God had not done this it would mean that the heavenly bodies would have to have been created *billions of years before* the "initial earth", in order for starlight to reach *that* version of the planet!

In other words, gap creationists who reject that God can instantaneously create distant starlight reaching the earth in one day have merely transferred the same problem onto the “initial creation”.

With regard to the claim that the universe has to be billions of years old otherwise we on earth would not be able to view the light reaching us today from the explosions of supernovas more than 6000 light years away, it is a good point and sounds logical. But it is not necessarily correct reasoning.

I don't plan to spend much time on this, but there are two points that need to be considered.

Starlight and Time

Firstly, a less-well-known aspect of Einstein's physics is that the speed of light in one direction cannot be objectively measured, and so it must be stipulated (agreed upon by convention). This stands in contrast to the round-trip speed of light, which has been measured and found to be always constant. The reason that the one-way speed of light cannot be objectively measured is that you need to have a way to synchronise two clocks separated by a vast distance to record a detectable value. But in order to do this, you have to already know the one-way speed of light. In other words, it cannot be done without circular reasoning.

Albert Einstein's resolution to this dilemma was to suggest that the one-way speed of light is not actually a property of nature but is instead a convention – something that we may choose! So although many physicists choose to regard the speed of light as being the same in both directions, any other choice is also acceptable, so long as the round-trip speed is 300,000km/s.

In which case, the transmission of light from exploding stars to the observer could, potentially, be instantaneous, while the reflected light travels back to the light source at the conventional speed of light. This theory is just as plausible as any other theoretical model of the universe that does not conflict with Einstein's theory of relativity.

Secondly, there is absolutely no guarantee that any cosmological model man has constructed and developed is anywhere near the truth of how the universe is structured and functions.

For example, even Einstein's theory of relativity is not sacrosanct, as there are some secular cosmologists today who say the speed of light may have changed recently. If this is the case, it would undermine much of our current understanding of physics. In a 2004 *New Scientist* article we are told:

“The controversial finding is turning up the heat on an already simmering debate ... A varying speed of light contradicts Einstein's theory of relativity, and would undermine much of traditional physics.”
<https://www.newscientist.com/article/dn6092-speed-of-light-may-have-changed-recently>)

The fact is, the whole matter of time is an enigma to man, so we would be wise to not make rash statements. For example, I recently watched a very interesting Sid Roth interview with Chuck Missler, who was describing time and eternity. Here I have paraphrased Missler's comments:

“We all assume that time is linear and absolute. After all, in our understanding, time operates from left to right – e.g. the birth, life and death of a person or empire. So when we start talking about eternity, or God, we tend to imagine someone who has lots of time, because we think of eternity as a line that starts at infinity on the left and goes to infinity on the right. That, however, is bad physics. This is because we know from Einstein's theory of relativity that time is a physical property that varies with mass, acceleration and gravity.

“Is God someone who is subject to gravity? Of course not. So God is also someone who is not subject to time. Rather, he dwells outside of the restrictions of the physical realm. The origin of God's Word

– the Bible – is also outside of time, because God alone knows the end from the beginning. The prophet Isaiah writes:

“For thus says the High and Lofty One, Who inhabits eternity, whose name is Holy...’ (Is 57:15)

“God demonstrates this by knowing about history before it happens.

‘For I am God, and there is no other; I am God, and there is none like Me, Declaring the end from the beginning, And from ancient times things that are not yet done...’ (Is 46:10)

“To us, life is a sequence of events. For example, we can be standing on a street corner waiting for a marching band to come around the corner. That is our reality. However, someone who is in a helicopter above can see the beginning and the end simultaneously. That is the position God is in.” (<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=2OtlyQ3HHHI>)

Technology vs Scientific Invention

The point is to say that man (especially unconverted man) in the 21st century likes to congratulate himself for being more knowledgeable and wiser than any previous generation. This in itself is an outcome of evolutionism – the errant philosophy that man is getting smarter with every decade. The fact is, developments in industry and technology *have* improved our lives, but they have also led to an undeserved and uncritical faith in all things termed science.

Defining the difference between technology and scientific invention, science writer Fergus McGinley explains that while technology has substance, scientific invention has a large dose of mystery. He then explains some of the erroneous assumptions underlying scientific inquiry:

“The problem with scientific theories and laws is that they can’t be seen or handled. They’re usually expressed symbolically – on paper, in mathematical equations, in technical journals and textbooks.

“Worse still, they’re often about things which themselves can’t be seen (like gravity, atoms, genes, wave functions and quarks), or about things which existed long ago or happened slowly over a long period of time (the big bang, evolution, continental drift), or about things that are so complex, or big, or far away that they are very hard to measure (El Nino, black holes). Science has power, but it also has plenty of mystery and mystique; technology just has power!” (Fergus McGinley, ‘Science: Discovery Or Invention’, *CEN Technical Journal*, Vol 13[2], 1999)

But although man may be gaining knowledge (especially in the field of technology), he is also becoming more deceived and morally degenerate, as the Bible foretells (Dan 12:4; 2 Tim 3:1-7). Also, we should never confuse the genuine advancement in the empirical sciences and technology with “advancement” in scientific theories and mysticism and the philosophy of naturalism – the origin sciences.

Man’s Words Without Knowledge

And I cannot help but think of our Creator’s awesome and sobering words to Job, when He answered him out of the whirlwind and questioned his presumed wisdom on the very matter of light. From Job’s response, we know he was deeply sorrowful and humbled, and he repented (Job 40:3-5; Is 66:2; Ps 34:18). (Job pictured below with his friends.)

“Then the LORD answered Job out of the whirlwind, and said: ‘Who is this who darkens counsel by words without knowledge? Now prepare yourself like a man; I will question you, and you shall answer Me. Where were you when I laid the foundations of the earth? Tell Me, if you have understanding. ...’” (Job 38:1,2-4)

“Where is the way to the dwelling of light? And darkness, where is its place, That you may take it to its territory, That you may know the paths to its home? Do you know it, because you were born then, Or because the number of your days is great?... Do you know the ordinances of the heavens? Can you set their dominion over the earth?” (Job 19-21; 33)

“Then Job answered the LORD and said: ‘I know that You can do everything, And that no purpose of Yours can be withheld from You. You asked, “Who is this who hides counsel without knowledge?” Therefore I have uttered what I did not understand, Things too wonderful for me, which I did not know.’” (Job 42:1-3)

And in the New Testament, the apostle Paul reminds us:

“For the wisdom of this world is foolishness with God. For it is written, ‘He catches the wise in their own craftiness’.” (1 Cor 3:19)

It has been estimated (in 2012) there are at least 10,000 young-earth creation scientists in the US alone. Some dismiss old-earth evolutionism openly, others privately.

For anyone who wants to seriously research the claims that our earth is billions of years old, they will find a recent-earth explanation for every old-earth explanation by equally credentialed scientists.

“He counts the number of the stars; He calls them all by name” (Ps 147:4)

“Then the LORD answered Job out of the whirlwind, and said: ‘Who is this who darkens counsel By words without knowledge? ... Where were you when I laid the foundations of the earth? Tell Me, if you have understanding.’” (Job 38:1-2, 4)

CHAPTER 7

How is the Age of the Earth Measured?

SYNOPSIS: The London Geological Society is established in 1807 on a new philosophy, deism – Charles Lyell presents a new history of the earth – Uniformitarianism or catastrophism? – What is behind the earth’s ever-increasing timescale? – How and when 4.5 billion years was added to the age of the earth? How reliable and factual are scientific dating systems?

It is not my intention, on this website, to write reams about the age of the earth and dating methods. There are many excellent science-based ministries that specialise in this subject and cover every possible question; for example Creation Ministries International and Answers in Genesis (refer to Resources). Here I only skim the surface, to provide a little history and a peek into old earth reasoning, which I hope will motivate the reader to research this fascinating subject and enlightening truth for themselves.

Fact: no scientific method can prove the age of the earth and the universe, because all dating methods and calculations necessarily involve making assumptions about the past – assumptions that cannot be scientifically proven. Thus they are all based on faith – faith on what man tells us, or faith in what the God of the Bible tells us!

For example, the history of the Grand Canyon is cloaked in mystery. Some scientists, who subscribe to slow and continuous geological processes over vast periods of time (called uniformitarianism), believe it to be around six million years old. Other uniformitarian scientists, however, claim it is 65 million years old!

“How could everyone have gotten it so wrong? New research indicates that the Grand Canyon is perhaps 65 million years old, far older than previously thought – and old enough that the last surviving dinosaurs may have stomped along its rim.” (Berardelli, P., ‘Did Dinosaurs Gawk at the Grand Canyon?’, 2008, sciencenow.sciencemag.org)

There are yet other, equally qualified, scientists who take the catastrophists’ perspective. These catastrophist geologists operate from the view that the history of the earth’s geology is a result of discontinuities in the earth history, such as climate change, continental break-up and collision, earthquakes, astronomical influences, magnetic reversal, etc, etc. Some of these catastrophists are secular evolutionists, and some are Bible-believing Christians.

Whether secular or religious, these scientists share the concern (and frustration) that the reigning uniformitarian preconceptions and assumptions within the geological establishment means that no exploration of other aspects of reality can take place within its walls at an academic level.

All of these scientists rely on dating methods – so what is happening?

The New Religion of Deism Steers 18th Century Science

The philosophising over the earth’s age in continental Europe and England has really only been within the last 300 years. Two of the most dominant philosophers during this time were **James Hutton** (1726–1797) and **Charles Lyell** (1797-1875). It was Lyell who gave wide prominence to Hutton’s ideas in the scientific community during his day. Both of these philosophers/scientists were

deists. That means they were motivated by a belief in the existence of a supreme being who is detached from His creation and does not intervene in the affairs or workings of the universe.

Hutton also held panentheistic views – i.e. the New Age, pagan, Gaia concept that the earth is a living superorganism, which is a creation story originating from Greek mythology. (Refer *GAIA – A New Look At Life On Earth* by James Lovelock, 1979, Oxford University Press, pp.xviii-xix.) The interest generated by Hutton's antibiblical theory of an ancient earth cannot be overstated.

In other words, these men were not working from a neutral, unbiased perspective, which is the case for all people – scientists and non-scientists alike! It is important to realise this when considering philosophical/scientific explanations about the creation and its history, because all facts are interpreted through a person's belief system.

It is interesting to note that the deistic worldview (and an ancient history of the earth) was born around the time of the French Revolution, a time when scientific thought and literary theories were brought together in a concerted effort to demolish the biblical account of human history. The Enlightenment was “an intellectual and philosophical movement that dominated the world of ideas in Europe during the 18th century, the ‘Century of Philosophy’.” (Wikipedia). In the Encyclopaedia Britannica, we read:

“**Deism**, [is] an unorthodox religious attitude that found expression among a group of English writers beginning with **Edward Herbert** ... in the first half of the 17th century ... The high point of Deist thought occurred in England from about 1689 through 1742, during a period when, despite widespread counterattacks from the established Church of England, there was relative freedom of religious expression following upon the Glorious Revolution that ended the rule of James II and brought William III and Mary II to the throne. Deism took deep root in 18th-century Germany after it had ceased to be a vital subject of controversy in England.” (www.britannica.com/EBchecked/topic/156154/Deism)

Lyell Advocates a New Theory

Charles Lyell began his career studying the catastrophist school of thought under **William Buckland**. Buckland was an English geologist and palaeontologist who was elected a fellow of the Royal Society (the world's oldest scientific academy) in 1818. **Catastrophists** suspected that the earth's landscape was shaped by events such as earthquakes, volcanic eruptions and floods, which had happened on a larger scale in the geologic past than at present.

When Buckland tried to link catastrophism to the Bible, looking for evidence that the most recent catastrophe had actually been Noah's global flood, Lyell rejected this line of scientific inquiry. That is because he rejected any supernatural event associated with the Bible.

And so Lyell began formulating a new theory, based purely on **naturalism** – the material world without God's input.

But anything to do with the history of creation that relies on a deistic god or no god at all can hardly be considered a more natural explanation!

Lyell's theory was based on the belief that today's observable geomorphic processes could be projected into the far distant past to explain the features found in geology: (emphases added)

“In 1828 [Lyell] explored the volcanic region of the Auvergne, then went to Mount Etna to gather supporting evidence *for a theory of geology he was developing*. In brief, this stated that, given sufficient time, millions of years, geological change was slow and gradual and not subject to inexplicable catastrophe such as Noah's Flood. In 1829, Volume One of his great work *Principles Of*

Geology appeared.” (‘People Of Angus: Charles Lyell’, www.angus.gov.uk/history/features/people/lyell.htm, 2010)

“[Lyell was] largely responsible for the general acceptance of the view that all features of the earth’s surface are produced by physical, chemical, and biological processes [as currently observed] through long periods of geological time. The concept was called **uniformitarianism** (initially set forth by James Hutton). Lyell’s achievements laid the foundations for evolutionary biology [common-ancestor evolution].” (*Encyclopaedia Britannica*, www.britannica.com/EBchecked/topic/352672/Sir-Charles-Lyell-Baronet)

Global Flood Explanation is Replaced with an Ancient-Earth Model

Lyell proposed that the earth’s features did not reveal the aftermath of a worldwide flood 4500 years ago and the biblical history of an earth around 6000 years old. Instead he taught they were a result of its ancient age. He had no proof – just conjecture. The power Lyell wielded in the future establishment of evolutionary theory in the sciences was profound (although he himself did not believe in evolution until Charles Darwin persuaded him much later).

This was also a time when some Christians, who sought to bring the Bible into line with these new geological theories about the ancient age of the earth, formulated the origin models of the gap theory and progressive creation.

Writes Dr **Terry Mortenson**:

“In the early nineteenth century, many Christians sought to harmonize biblical teaching with old-earth geological theories such as the **gap theory** and a tranquil or local Noachian flood. However, many evangelicals and High Churchmen still held to the literal view of Genesis 1–11. Two Enlightenment-generated philosophical movements in the eighteenth century, **deism** and **atheism**, elevated human reason to a place of supreme authority and took an anti-supernaturalistic view of the Bible, holding it to be just another human book.

“The two movements, with their advocacy of an old-earth and their effect on astronomy and geology, preceded Darwin and supplied him with millions of years needed for his naturalistic theory of the origin of living things.” (T. Mortenson, ‘Philosophical Naturalism And The Age Of The Earth: Are They Related?’, *The Master’s Seminary Journal* (TMSJ) 15(1):71–92, Spring 2004.)

Mortenson, who has a PhD in the History of Geology, explains that the world’s first scientific society totally devoted to geology was the **London Geological Society** (LGS), which was founded in 1807 and whose members were mostly deists.

At that time, not only was very little known about the geological features of the earth but there were no university degrees in geology and no professional geologists. However, the LGS was governed by the assumption that the earth’s history was much older than, and different from, that which was presented in the biblical account. Interestingly, a few of its most powerful members were Anglican clergy (some of whom were being pressured by the deist members). Thus it is hardly surprisingly that the gap theory first entered Protestant theology and the churches around this time – and continued to be popular for the next 150 years.

As for the introduction of scientific degrees in the London Geological Society, none were seen until the 1830s and 1840s, by which time deistic thought dominated the intellectual community.

This was long after the naturalistic idea of an old earth had become firmly entrenched in the minds of those who controlled the geological societies, journals and university geology departments.

Gradual Processes or Sudden Catastrophe

In 'Landform Theories Of The 18th And 19th Centuries,' the *Encyclopaedia Britannica* lists a number of geologic and geomorphic concepts. Here we read of the different "proposals", "views", "concepts", "theories", "ideas" and of "the philosophical climate" of scientists at this time.

The two most prominent geological theories were **uniformitarianism** and **catastrophism**.

Uniformitarianism is a category that falls within the more encompassing belief system of gradualism. The theory of **gradualism** is the philosophical belief that changes come about via small, gradual steps, rather than abrupt, large changes. This includes political, linguistic, sociological and scientific theories. Thus uniformitarianism is the belief that geological changes come about via gradual processes, such as we see going on around us today. **James Hutton** and **Charles Lyell** popularised uniformitarianism in the 18th and 19th century respectively.

It was a doctrine that supported the gradualists' worldview of his day, which was founded on the **philosophy of naturalism**. And although the uniformitarianism worldview was not necessarily a conscious attempt by all philosophers/scientists to deny the Bible, it was the logical outcome of this theory. However it was certainly Charles Lyell's goal, as he saw himself as "the spiritual saviour of geology, freeing the science from the old dispensation of Moses". (Refer Roy S. Porter, July 1976, 'Charles Lyell And The Principles Of The History Of Geology', *The British Journal For The History of Science* 32 (2): 91–103).

Uniformitarianism Rises to Prominence

Catastrophism, which preceded **uniformitarianism**, was itself a departure from biblical authority, because it denied that the global flood of Noah's day was a unique event that shaped the earth's geology, but instead called for many floods and catastrophic events over a timescale of long ages. Each theory has its proponents and sails or sinks with the philosophical climate of the day. For example, in the *Encyclopaedia Britannica* under Continental Landform we read:

"Catastrophism: During the late 18th and early 19th century, the leading proponent of this view was the German mineralogist **Abraham Gottlob Werner**. According to Werner, all of the Earth's rocks were formed by rapid chemical precipitation from a 'world ocean', which he then summarily disposed of in catastrophic fashion. ... his catastrophic philosophy of changes of the Earth had two major consequences of geomorphic significance. First, it indirectly led to the formulation of an opposing, less extreme view by the Scottish scientist James Hutton in 1785. Second, it was in some measure correct: catastrophes do occur on the Earth and they do change its landforms."

"Uniformitarianism: [In contrast] The Huttonian proposal that the earth has largely achieved its present form through the past occurrence of processes still in operation [today] has come to be known as the **doctrine of uniformitarianism**... Uniformitarianism also became *the working principle* for a growing number of geologic historians, notably **William Smith** and Sir **Charles Lyell**, in the 19th century. This was necessary as Lyell argued increasingly that geologic change was incremental and gradual: "He needed a longer time scale if this approach was to work, and geologic historians were finding it for him."

Eventually, uniformitarianism (slow change over long periods of time) became the preferred theory over catastrophism (vast geological changes occurring over short periods of time). (emphases added)

"Sir Charles Lyell was a renowned geologist of the mid-nineteenth century. He was a firm believer in uniformitarianism. This *philosophy claims* that geological and biological 'causes', or forces, have always been working in the same way and with the same intensity.

“Lyell’s work formed the foundation of belief in a universe billions of years old. Though Lyell had trouble accepting some evolutionary theories, his work heavily influenced Charles Darwin.

*“In fact, Darwin’s concept of gradual evolution *lacked an acceptable time frame until he embraced Lyell’s old-earth theories...* Like Darwin’s theories, the work of Sir Charles Lyell provided logical, rational explanations *that suited the beliefs of many scientists*. Over time, those explanations were considered proofs, and nowadays the scientific community at large accepts *Lyell’s explanations* for rock layers and other geological effects with little question.” (‘How Did Sir Charles Lyell Influence Charles Darwin?’; www.allaboutscience.org/sir-charles-lyell-faq.htm)*

And so, when it comes to scientific theories about the age of the earth, geologists today are locked into Lyell’s uniformitarian model based on his deistic and naturalist beliefs, and woe betide anyone who questions it.

Furthermore, few people (scientists included) have the courage or means to step out against peer pressure to pursue other lines of thought.

Theories – from 5000 Years to 4.6 Billion Years

Research into theories about the age of the earth reveals that philosophers in the Middle East and Asia, from religious and historical documents, calculated the earth to be about **5000 to 6000 years old**. However, by the 18th century other methods were being used to estimate the earth’s age.

George-Louis Leclerc, Comte de Buffon (1707-1788) was a French naturalist, mathematician, cosmologist, and encyclopaedic author. He measured the rate of cooling small metal balls and calculated the earth to be about **75,000 years old**.

He also wondered if there could be any common ancestry between men and apes, but could not come up with a coherent mechanism. (Neither has Darwinism, to this day.)

(Note: just because things share similarities does not necessarily mean that one came from the other, but rather that they share the same design features and the same designer.)

In 1862, **William Thomson**, better known as **Baron Kelvin of Largs** (1824-1907), assumed that the earth was originally molten and, based on cooling by conduction and radiation, calculated that the earth required about **98 million years** to cool, although towards the end of his life he revised this to **20-40 million years**. He concluded that it was too short to fit with Lyell’s theory of gradual geological change or Charles Darwin’s theory of the evolution of life through natural selection.

In 1898, **John Joly** measured the amount of salt being carried into the sea and used this theory to calculate the earth was about **80-90 million years old**; he later revised this to **100 million years**. Another idea was that if the total thickness of the sedimentary record and the average rate of sedimentation could be measured, then the age of the earth could be calculated. This resulted in a wide range of ages, but the maximum age of the earth using this method was about **500 million years**.

And by the 1950s, estimations of the earth’s age had leapt to 3.1 billion years old. Today it is said to be 4.6 billion years! And there have been many, many other estimations.

Why the Ever-Increasing Timescale?

So why this sliding timescale, first of thousands, then millions, then billions of years?

It certainly highlights the uncertainties involved when developing a dating method, based on a raft of untestable assumptions, to fit an unprovable theory from an individual’s point of view.

One thing they all have in common, however, is a willingness to reject what the Bible teaches about the timing of creation. And the trend seems to have always been upward, as naturalistic philosophers continue to theorise about how all life could have possibly evolved from one common ancestor. Moreover, the timeframe was always too short to make it even half-way plausible for all the conjectured and necessary biological changes to have taken place.

Today, fewer than 200 years later, Lyell's "millions of years" have changed into "billions of years", as more and more time is deemed necessary by scientists to accommodate Darwin's improbable path of evolution.

Lyell, together with many of his peers, did not believe in the authority of the Bible – *this was not their scientific conclusion, it was their philosophical starting point!*

Consequently, it is not surprising that he rejected the Genesis explanation of the earth's history and the devastating worldwide flood, sent by a grieving God to a world that had lost its way and had become filled with sin. As a result, Lyell's belief system led him to develop his own view of the world – the doctrine of uniformitarianism.

The Unreliability of Dating Methods

Before closing this chapter, I will present just two examples of the unreliability of modern dating systems – that of carbon-14, and the potassium-argon method. *These examples reveal the problems endemic in all scientific testing attempts.* All of which are the result of the evolutionary paradigm mandated by the mainstream scientific establishment and the automatic rejection of data that does not fit the accepted worldview. For more information, refer to any of the creation science websites. (See Resources.)

Carbon-14 dating in a nutshell: When a creature dies, its carbon-14 (radiocarbon) atoms are not replaced from the outside so the amount of carbon-14 present in its body reduces with time. At this point, a radiocarbon clock can be said to be ticking away. When tests are conducted on the dead creature, the amount of carbon-14 remaining (in proportion to non-radioactive carbon) can be measured and its age can be determined.

However, as with all dating methods, assumptions need to be made. **Willard Frank Libby** (1908-1980), who was the discoverer of this system, based his dating method on the belief that the earth was billions of years old and that the carbon-14 (C14) levels in the atmosphere have been constant for many hundreds of millions of years into the past.

This assumption was factored into his dating system.

"The troubles of the radiocarbon [carbon-14] dating method are undeniably deep and serious ... It should be no surprise, then, that fully half of the dates are rejected. The wonder is, surely, that the remaining half come to be accepted." (R. E. Lee, 'Radiocarbon, Ages In Error', *Anthropological Journal Of Canada*, Vol 19, No 3, p9, 1981)

Working with other assumptions, however, (such as a younger earth) will change the dates drastically. In other words, the results of radiocarbon dating will depend on a person's starting point – where they place their faith – in billions of years or thousands of years. In fact, radiocarbon is not supposed to be found in fossils that are said to be even 100,000 years old, as it would have decayed by that time. Yet every time tests are conducted on specimens such as coal or oil they contain radiocarbon. (Refer creation.com/carbon-14-dating-explained-in-everyday-terms.)

This means that C14 is actually the young earth creationists' friend, because coal and oil samples claimed to be millions of years old do contain measurable C14 quantities, meaning they cannot be that old!

“The age of the organisms and their resulting fossil fuels is typically millions of years, and sometimes exceeds **650 million years**. Fossil fuels contain high percentages of carbon and include petroleum, coal, and natural gas.” (https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Fossil_fuel, viewed Dec 2019)

As for young-earth creationist scientists, they work on the assumption that no other scientist will consider, because of the biblical implications: that Noah’s worldwide flood was a reality. This presupposition opens up perfectly feasible and completely different ways in which to interpret the geological features of the earth, resulting in conclusions that clash head on with evolutionary assumptions and yet fit with empirical findings.

The second unreliable dating method example I present here is that of potassium-argon.

Failure of Potassium-Argon Dating Method Explained

“In June of 1992, geologist Dr Steven Austin collected a 7-kg (15-lb) block of dacite from high on the lava dome at Mount St Helens. ... The ‘whole rock’, rock powder and four mineral concentrates, were submitted for potassium-argon analysis to Geochron Laboratories of Cambridge, MA [in the US] – a high-quality, professional radioisotope-dating laboratory. The only information provided to the laboratory was that the samples came from dacite and that ‘low argon’ should be expected.

“The laboratory was not told that the specimen came from the lava dome at Mount St Helens and was only 10 years old. The results of this analysis are shown in Table 1. What do we see? First and foremost that they are wrong. A correct answer would have been ‘zero argon’ indicating that the sample was too young to date by this method. Instead, the results ranged from 340,000 to 2.8 million years! Why? Obviously, the assumptions were wrong, and this invalidates the ‘dating’ method ...” (creation.com/radio-dating-in-rubble; reference to table 1.)

In conclusion, each worldview operates from a combination of faith and presupposition in turning “facts” into “evidence” to support whichever origin theory is being pursued – none of which have been, nor can be, proven empirically. However, one is proclaimed by the biblical creation account and supported by Christian doctrines, while the other (ancient-earth theory) is not – no matter how many invented literary devices those who reject the plain reading of Genesis employ.

“He comes from the north as golden splendour; With God is awesome majesty.” (Job 37:22)

“I have no greater joy than to hear that my children walk in truth.” (3 John 1:4)

Chapter 8

Six Biblical Conundrums of the Gap Theory

SYNOPSIS: The matter of *hayah, tohuw, bohuw, bara* and *asah* – The gap theory is less than 200 years old – World renowned Hebraists agree, Genesis describes a single creation 6000 years ago – The gap theory’s invented words and terms – A doctrine that elevates the devil – The sobering origin of the gap theory, a surprising 3000-year back story. **Note:** Any reader not familiar with these gap theory arguments may struggle with this chapter. If this is the case for you personally, rather than become bogged down in detail and lost in the confusion, just read it to get a general overview (or skip to Chapter 9). This is because navigating the gap theory is like trying to paddle in mud, on account of the fact that it takes God’s plain account of creation and twists the words to formulate a bewildering narrative full of double meanings. Gap theorists like to confound people with their “original Hebrew” esoteric constructs – here I work to untangle them.

According to the gap theory, Gen 1:1 describes the creation of the heavens and the earth, and **Gen 1:2** describes the condition of the earth *after* it had been turned into a state of chaos and confusion and a total wasteland and God began to restore it. The only reason to interpret Genesis this way is so an indeterminate time period can be inserted into the creation narrative, because a) it brings the Bible into line with old age scientific theory, and/or b) some people believe this is necessary in order to accommodate the rebellion and fall of angels. This unbiblical reading of Genesis 1 presents us with two creations – the “initial creation” and the “re-creation”.

And so, according to gap creation, the word “was” in Gen 1:1-2 should be read as “became”:

“In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth. The earth **became** (*hayah*) without form (*tohuw*) and void (*bohuw*); and darkness was on the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God was hovering over the face of the waters.”

Consequently, from Gen 1:7 to Gen 2: 4 the word for “made” (*asah*) should be read “re-made”:

“And God **re-made** (*asah*) the firmament, and divided the waters which were under the firmament from the waters which were above the firmament: and it was so.” (Gen 1:7)

Also, from Gen 1:21 to Gen 2:4, the word “created” (*bara*) should now read “re-created”:

“And God **re-created** (*bara*) great whales, and every living creature that moves, which the waters brought forth abundantly, after their kind, and every winged fowl after his kind: and God saw that it was good” (Gen 1:21).

This really is the heart and core of gap creation reasoning, because without these controversial interpretations of Scripture there is NO gap theory.

There are, however, a number of problems with these arguments. The obvious being that the re-interpretation of these Hebrew words is arbitrary and inconsistent. This is because gap creationism applies these new meanings to some verses in Genesis 1 but not others. For example: Gen 1:1 – “In the beginning God **created** (*bara*) the heaven and the earth”. Here, gap creationists are quite happy to accept the reading of *bara* as “created”. After all, generally speaking, gap creationism does not claim that Genesis 1:1 is also referring to a “re-creation”. And in Gen 1:27: – “So God **created** (*bara*)

man... male and female he **created** (*bara*) them...". Gap creationism does not believe that God "re-created" man and woman.

Furthermore, in gap creation, the words *asah* and *bara*, after Genesis 2:4, return to their original meanings of made and create for the remainder of the Old Testament, showing that they are NOT interchangeable.

Below I have highlighted six other major problems with gap creation.

1: The Matter of *Hayah*, *Tohuw*, *Bohuw*, *Bara* and *Asah*

The gap theory relies on the controversial translation of five Hebrew words: *hayah*, *tohuw*, *bohuw*, *bara* and *asah* (and it *is* controversial). What's more, only a very small number of people in the history of Christianity have insisted on using these new words: "**became**" for "was" (*hayah*); "**re-created**" for "created" (*bara*); and "**re-made**" for "made" (*asah*) when referring to the creation account.

The gap theory also claims that Gen 1:2 "without form" (*tohuw*) should be interpreted as "**chaos and confusion**", which I comment on further down; and that "void" (*bohuw*) should be replaced with "**laid waste**". This particular point I will explore in Chapter 9 ('History of the Gap Theory').

Gap creationism admits that **Gen 1:2** tells us nothing about a "previous creation". And so we are usually directed to four other verses said to support this doctrine – Is 45:18; Is 34:11; Jer 4:23; Ps 104:30. (I have left out the Scriptures that refer to Lucifer's rebellion, as there is no question that Satan DID rebel, but rather *when* it occurred. Furthermore, this event fits more naturally with a 6000-year-old creation, as I document in Chapter 12; 'In the Beginning – a Young Earth Creation Narrative'.)

However, when we examine the four verses stated above, they don't confirm an ancient earth that was decimated after billions of years, at all.

First let us first examine the gap creationist's adopted position on the word *hayah*.

Hayah

When we hear arguments that support a doctrine, it is our responsibility to check out the facts for ourselves and not just trust what others tell us to believe (Acts 17:11). And one of the fundamental arguments used by gap creationists is that the Hebrew word for "was" (*hayah*) in Gen 1:2 (Strong's H1961) can be translated both as "was" and also "became". Thus, according to this reasoning, "the earth *was* formless, and void" can be changed to "the earth **became** formless, and void". In which case, something must have happened to make the earth that way, and so a gap of an indeterminate time period can be inserted between Gen 1:1 and Gen 1:2 – on the reasoning that "**was**" can legitimately be changed to "**became**".

But if we take a closer look at this claim, we find it is false.

Below is the verse in question, **Genesis 1:2**, as shown in the Masoretic Text (refer Blue Letter Bible – BLB – online). Here, the English word "was" is shown as the translation for the Hebrew root word *hayah*.

Now, in order to support the view that *hayah* can be translated "became", gap creationists refer to various other Bible verses where the word "became" is used. Their argument: "If *hayah* has been translated as '**became**' in Gen 3:20, because 'Eve **became** the mother of all living', and also in Gen 4:20 'Jabal **became** the father of tent dwellers' then *hayah* in Gen 1:2 can also be translated as '**became**'."

But if we take a closer look at this claim, we find it is false. Below is another screengrab from the BLB, and here we can see that the word *hayah* (Strong's H1961) does not actually exist in **Gen 3:20**. Rather the word "was" is connected to the Hebrew root word '*em* (Strong's H517).

As for **Gen 4:20** (seen below), the word "was" used in this verse has also **not** been translated from the Hebrew word *hayah*. Rather it is connected to the Hebrew word '*ab* (Strong's H1).

In other words, it is invalid to compare **Gen 3:20** and **Gen 4:20** to **Gen 1:2**, in an argument to defend the gap theory: i.e. that the word "became" in these two verses ('*em* and '*ab*) can be applied to the word *hayah* in **Genesis 1:2**.

(Note: there are two instances in the KJV where *hayah* has been interpreted as the English word "become". However, neither of these verses communicates an ancient development in the context of creation, which is why it is not used in **Gen 1:2**. Rather, they each describe a very recent event – having just occurred that day; ie. "have become". "O Israel; this day thou art **become** the people of the Lord thy God" – Deut 27:9; and "For thou hast confirmed to thyself thy people Israel to be a people unto thee for ever: and thou, LORD, art **become** their God" – 2 Sam 7:24.)

The Case of *Hayah* and Strong's Concordance

According to some gap creationists, the Hebrew root word *hayah* (Strong's H1961) occurs more than **600 times** in the KJV of the Bible and it has often been translated as "became". But if we look at the Masoretic Text, *hayah* only appears **75 times**. (Refer to the BLB; see screengrab below.)

Furthermore, **not once is the word "became" derived from the Hebrew word *hayah***. Rather, we find words such as *chay*, *na'er*, '*echad* and, *bayith*, etc...

So What is Going on?

These gap theory arguments appear to rely on the use of Strong's Concordance and Dictionaries. But **James Strong** (pictured below) was not a Hebraist or a Greek scholar. He was an engineer who was granted a Doctor of Divinity and later became a professor of exegetical theology.

His Concordance was written to provide an alphabetical listing of all the words in the KJV Bible along with a numbering system connecting these English words to their Hebrew or Greek root dictionary meanings. As such it is a very useful Bible study tool, as a concordance, but the result is not God's inspired text and it has its limitations. This is because the dictionary definitions provided in Strong's Concordance are not always literal renderings but rely, to some degree, on the subjective reasoning of the compiler. To compound this problem, many gap creationists look to various Bible software programs, such as **e-Sword**, as their authority.

I don't intend to go deeply into the unreliability of secondary sources here – i.e. Bible study aids such as dictionaries, commentaries and software programs – but I will say one thing. The Bible study software **e-Sword**, for example, is a product of its developer Rick Meyers. And it needs to be remembered that Meyers is not a Hebrew scholar, he is *a software programmer*. So it is important to know *which* resources he has utilised, *how* these databases have been compiled and in *what manner* they interact with a person's search terms. In other words, the users of **e-Sword** are relying, probably unaware, on a Bible study aid that operates with multiple vectors, and thus an unknown error content. I am not saying all the compilers of these Bible tools are being deceitful, but their tools are not accurate.

The fact is, the full power of Strong's Dictionaries ONLY comes to bear in conjunction with Strong's Concordance of the KJV.

Just applying a link between "Strong's Numbers" (which only provide a truncated dictionary meaning) and any other Bible version (which may use different words), via an unreliable/unknowable

third-party software program is a **seriously flawed study system for Bible students**. Without knowing this, a person using e-Sword *presumes* that a superscripted English word automatically identifies this word with the Masoretic text, when in reality it does not such thing!

Nevertheless, many people, it seems, do not realise this and they place too much faith in Bible study tools and Strong's Concordance as unchallenged authorities, effectively using them to "correct God's word", as it were.

The truth of the matter is that "became" in Strong's Concordance is most often *not* a direct translation from the Hebrew text but has been *added* to the KJV text for clarity in the English language. Also, the English word "became" is not connected to the Hebrew word *hayah* in any way, as evidenced in above examples in Strong's Concordance. And, as stated previously, the Hebrew word *hayah* does **not** occur over 600 times in the original text as indicated in e-Sword.

All of which illustrates that the argument claiming *hayah* can be translated as became in Gen 1:2 is not based on the Hebrew manuscripts but has been made with the help of various unreliable secondary sources. So where does that leave the serious Bible student?

The great miracle is that God has not left us without direction and without a dictionary – because the Bible itself presents a self-contained dictionary. After all, throughout the history of humankind, the overwhelming majority have not had access to so much Bible reference material. Thus it is clear that God has put everything we need within one book – His Book.

This might sound simplistic, but all a person needs is a concordance and a good version of the Bible (as opposed to the New Age/occult inspired versions – such as The Message and The Voice – being published today). And so, if we are testing a doctrine, or trying to understand difficult Scriptures, we *must* take the *entire Bible* into account and not the subjective, personal interpretation or claimed revelation of an individual or a group of people on a handful of words and Scriptures taken out of context (2 Pet 1:20). There is a word for this – proof texting:

"Proof texting is the method by which a person appeals to a biblical text to prove or justify a theological position without regard for the context of the passage they are citing"
(www.theopedia.com/proof-texting).

This is because an investigation at the "word" level into Scripture *will not lead a person to discover the truth of a matter*. Rather, we need to take the big-picture holistic approach by looking up the word in question and checking it against *all the other verses* where it is used. Furthermore, all words in Scripture must be defined by context and their use must be *consistent* with the rest of the Scriptures. Within the context of one of the verses listed, *God will define the word for us* (e.g. the meaning of "merchandise" in Eze 28:16 is explained in 2 Pet 2:3). Thus the *safest and wisest position is to let the Bible interpret itself*– i.e. *the whole Bible* has to have the last word– *and in context*.

Tohuw

To keep track of this argument, I highly recommend colour coding the Scriptures in this section (as seen on screen) if it has been printed out in black.

According to gap creationists, there are four Scriptures that confirm the creation fell into a state of confusion in **Gen 1:2**. These are **Is 45:18**; **Jer 4:23**; **Is 34:11**; **Ps 104:30**. All of these relate to the word **tohuw**. In Hebrew, *tohuw* can mean "place of chaos" and "wasteland", but it also has other meanings: "formlessness (of primeval earth), emptiness, nothingness, empty space, wilderness, of solitary places, vanity – of no value, for nought (futility)". But there is no support here for the gap creation argument that the earth became a place of "**chaos**" sometime between **Genesis 1:1** and **Genesis 1:2**.

Let us look at the first example cited above **Is 45:18**, where the Bible translation of *tohuw* is “**in vain**” (futility).

“He created the earth **not in vain** (*tohuw*), he formed it **to be inhabited**”. In other words, God created the earth to be filled with life. And if we look at the very next verse **Is 45:19**, God says, “I have not spoken in secret, In a dark place of the earth; I did not say to the seed of Jacob, ‘Seek Me **in vain**’” (*tohuw*).

Gap creationists never mention this verse, and it is easy to see why. It make no sense if we replaced “in vain” (futility) with “confusion” here. (“I did not say... ‘Seek me in confusion’”).

The same for **Jer 4:23**: “I beheld the earth and lo it was **without form** (*tohuw*)” – it has not yet been formed! These are not difficult Scriptures to understand, as God clarified (above) “I have not spoken in secret in a dark place on the earth”.

Now let us move on to the next Scripture that is used to support the gap theory, **Is 34:11**: “But the pelican and the porcupine shall possess it, Also the owl and the raven shall dwell in it. And He shall stretch out over it, The line of **confusion** (*tohuw*) and the stones of emptiness”. When this verse is read in context, God is addressing “you nations” and “you people” and he tells them of the slaughter that is coming “on the people of my curse, for judgment”. It has nothing to do with the creation process, which is why the English word “confusion” was not the translation used in Gen 1:2, rather the English words “**formless, and void**” were.

In short, just because words can be used in a variety of ways does not allow their meanings to be automatically interchangeable, because meanings depend on context. And no more so than in God’s holy Scriptures. As such we can’t swap them in and out of sentences at will, because such a practice will often result in an entirely different meaning (which is the whole point of gap creationism). And ignoring the contextual meaning by exercising one’s personal judgment on one word, while dismissing Scriptures that don’t fit, seems to be a very dangerous practice!

We have warnings in Scripture that we must not add or take away from God’s Word (Deut 4:2; Pro 30:6; Rev 22:19). This would include changing the intended meaning of the original writers.

Regarding **Ps 104:30**, gap creationists always refer to this Scripture as evidence that the earth had been destroyed and re-created. “You send forth Your Spirit, they are **created** (*bara*); And You renew (*chadash*) the face of the earth”.

But **firstly**, there is no mention of a re-creation here. **Secondly**, a look at this verse in its context describes how the psalmist meditated on the visible creation all around him – the sea, the sky and the creatures therein – and how the Lord continually administers and sustains and renews it. He even talks about “man” and “the ships”, which would make no sense whatsoever in the context of an “initial creation” ruled by Satan.

“This great and wide sea, In which are innumerable teeming things, Living things both small and great. There the ships sail about; There is that Leviathan Which You have made to play there.” (Ps 104:25-26)

In other words, the psalmist is reflecting on the continual renewal process taking place in THIS creation now not reflecting on a “previous creation” or a “re-created” earth.

Bara and Asah

Moving on to **bara** and **asah**, these words have been completely mistranslated in gap theory reasoning. This is evident when a search for synonyms for each word is conducted. It proves that “**created**” (*bara*) is not a synonym for “**re-created**”; and “**made**” (*asah*) is not a synonym for

“re-made”, as they have very different meanings. This is *exactly* why gap creationists use them, because *they know they have radically changed their definitions*. These changes are mandatory, however, if a person wants these verses to “fit” with a gap creation timeline. But God is not ignorant of the Hebrew word for re-made, renovate, renew or re-create, nor is he careless with the words he has chosen. In Hebrew, to remake something is *`asah shuwb* (literally “made again”).

“And the vessel that he *made* (*`asah*) of clay was marred in the hand of the potter: so he *made it again* (*`asah shuwb*) another vessel, as seemed good to the potter to make it.” (Jer 18:4).

God could also have used the word *chadash* in Genesis 1, which can mean “make anew; repair; renew”, but he didn’t. As we see from the Bible verses below, there is no reference in the creation account to *`asah shuwb* – made again; or *chadash* – repair.

Note how God rested from “all His work which he had done” on the seventh day. If gap creationism were true that would mean the Lord would have been working for billions of years before the “re-creation” and before he got an opportunity to finally rest from creating. Also, God confirms in the verses below that the creation of the heavens and the earth was completed in six days. And that in its history, no plants or herbs had ever existed before!

“Thus the heavens and the earth, and all the host of them, were finished. And on *the seventh day* God ended His work which He had done, and He rested on *the seventh day* from all His work which He had done. Then God blessed the seventh day and sanctified it, because in it He rested from all His work which God had **created** (*bara*) and **made** (*asah*). This is the history of the heavens and the earth when they were **created** (*bara*), in the day that the Lord God **made** (*asah*) **the earth and the heavens, before any plant of the field was in the earth and before any herb of the field had grown.**” (Gen 2:1-5)

2) The Gap Theory is Less Than 200 Years Old

Historically, there is no evidence that the gap theory was **taught in churches** for 1900 years, until it was popularised by a number of Protestant theologians (including **C. I. Scofield** and **A. C. Custance**). These men, and many others before them, were trying to reconcile the Bible with the newly proclaimed (early 19th century) old-age history of the world being promoted, first by deists and then by evolutionists. (emphases added)

“A Scottish theologian named **Thomas Chalmers** (1780-1847) was the first on record to propose the theory of a gap of time in one of his lectures at Edinburgh University in 1814.

“Until 1814, no theologian or recording in any literature of any culture’s history put forth this idea of a gap between Genesis 1:1 and 2.

“Chalmers gave little detail about the gap; it was only an idea ...” (Robert E. Franzen, *Creation Under Fire From Within The Church*, 2009, p42)

“The single most effective teacher of this view [the gap theory] was C. I. Scofield, who included it in his notes on Genesis in the astonishingly popular Scofield Reference Bible. From there it became the almost unquestioned view of [Protestant] Fundamentalism...” (James Montgomery Boice, *Genesis, Vol. 1*, p50-51).

Bible commentator C. I. Scofield openly admitted his Reference Bible was trying to fit the Genesis creation account into the modern (evolutionary) science account.

“Relegate [consign] fossils to the primitive creation, and no conflict of science with the Genesis cosmogony remains.” (C. I. Scofield, Scofield Reference Bible, 1945, p4)

3) World Renowned Hebraists Do Not Support the Gap Theory

The **Hebrew Calendar** has traditionally dated the creation to 3761 B.C, and world-renowned Hebraists today do not support the claim for an “initial creation” and a “re-creation”. For example, **James Barr** (d. 2006), who was Oriel Professor of the Interpretation of the Holy Scriptures, in Oxford, England (1976-1978), wrote in a letter to David Watson, Senior Fellow of Trinity College, Cambridge. He stated that as far as he knew.

“... there is no professor of Hebrew or the Old Testament at any world-class university who does not believe that the writer(s) of Genesis 1-11 intend to convey to their readers the idea that creation took place in a series of six days, which were the same as the days of 24 hours we now experience.” (Gorden Kainer, *God’s Solution to the Doubting Dilemma*, p177)

Decades later and other world-class Hebraists today still agree with **James Barr** – that the author’s intent in Genesis was to clearly communicate a single creation (6000 years ago), which was completed in the literal first-ever six days. Three of these Hebraists are: **Hugh Williamson**, the Regius Professor of Hebrew at Oxford University (perhaps the most prestigious university in the world, and Williamson is one of the best Hebraists anywhere); **Emanuel Tov** of Hebrew University Jerusalem and FBA Editor-in-Chief of the Dead Sea Scrolls Publication Project (he would be one of the most qualified Hebraists in the world today); and **Peter Williams**, who is the warden of the theological research library at Tyndale House, Cambridge, England (which is the most prestigious of such facilities in the world), and there are others.

And the interesting thing is that although these men themselves have fallen in with the evolutionary paradigm, they have not tried to twist the Scriptures to fit their personal beliefs but admit, against their own worldview, that this is what the Hebrews wrote, believed and taught. (Refer article by Jud Davis, Associate Professor of Greek, ‘24 Hours – Plain As Day’, answersingenesis.org/articles/am/v7/n2/24-hours).

4) The Gap Theory’s New Words and Terms

The gap theory requires us to introduce new terms into the Masoretic text – e.g. “previous age”, “initial creation”, “the original creation”, “the Genesis prologue”, “the days of renewal”, “the renovation”, “the re-creation” and “a full restoration during six 24-hour days” (as used by the church I have referred to previously) – even though *these words are found nowhere in Scripture*.

5) A Disturbing Doctrine that Elevates the Devil

But what is most disturbing is that this attempt to insert a gap-creation backstory into God’s Word introduces a new and lengthy chapter all about Satan *in between the lines of Scripture*, right at the beginning of the Bible, and then fills it with all manner of speculation that is confirmed nowhere in God’s Word.

Thus, in gap creationism, the devil is given the greatest possible prominence in the whole creation process. This fact alone should trigger our hearts to want to know the truth.

He is said to have ruled from his throne on the earth for billions of years throughout the “initial creation”. During this time, he has had dominion over all the works of God’s hands as well as over one third of the angels. He was given the creative ability to tend and finish the earth, as well as the power to potentially complete the universe and expand his lordship over the entire cosmos – as king of the universe. And when he took to the heavens to attack God and His angels, he caused such colossal damage that the inhabitants of the whole earth (some gap theorists believe this included soulless men) were all killed and the once awe-inspiring beautiful planet was reduced to rubble – finishing in chaos and confusion and a barren wasteland.

If this reading of Genesis were true, it would mean that the whole creation would have been so totally devastated that by Gen 1:2 it had been reduced to a formless body of water and God even had to “re-create the” firmament. That is, the expanse of the heavens where the celestial bodies are meant to

reside! In which case we would read: “And God **RE-made** the firmament, and divided the waters which were under the firmament from the waters which were above the firmament: and it was so (Gen 1:7)”.

The above scenario (taught in some churches) would mean that the devil managed to practically obliterate the entire universe, which is considered by some gap creationists to still be in a state of corruption and decay today. (Refer ‘Creation or Evolution: Does It Really Matter What You Believe?’, United Church of God, [download available online.](#)) This, however, is in direct contrast to what King David said – that the heavens declare God’s righteousness and His glory and the firmament declares His handiwork, not the destruction by Satan (Ps 97:6; Ps 19:1; Ps 96:11-12).

Alternatively, according to another gap theory viewpoint, God inexplicably sat back and allowed Satan a free hand to do as he pleased, until eventually He intervened – not to destroy Satan, but to destroy His own beautiful creation and allow the devil to continue his rule over the earth – from the “initial creation” into the next creation (ie. “renovation”).

Either way, gap creationism portrays Satan as a formidable warrior capable of frustrating God’s plans on every level.

God’s Plan A – in which He gave Lucifer the earth and hoped he would eventually rule the universe – failed, now He had to resort to Plan B, creating man (which is what I had been taught in one church). All of God’s work had been destroyed and he had to start all over again, by conducting a total re-make of the earth’s surface and atmosphere (firmament), reappointing the heavenly bodies back into their correct place, and remaking all the beautiful creatures he had initially made (some of which, apparently, had originally been “designed” as predators and carnivores). After which, God introduced a new creature, man (which He would now have to die for; Rev 13:8). The result of which is quite possibly a lesser creation (a B-version, as opposed to the A-version, which Lucifer was gifted with and enjoyed for time immemorial).

Nevertheless, after all this, the devil is still considered so vital to God’s plan that he has continued his rulership, from his throne on the “initial earth” straight through into the claimed “re-creation”, without a break. And when God had to fix the mess during the “re-creation” and plant Eden, it was all done in the angry presence of the Destroyer under his “lawful” rulership. Thus God has been overshadowed in His creation and seemingly incapable of stopping the devil’s intergalactic rampage, not once (on the “initial creation”) but twice (on the new “re-creation”, too).

Now let us take stock of all of this: here we have a creation narrative that gives Satan pre-eminence over the actual creation as well as the creation story – being capable of constantly and successfully obstructing God’s every objective!

6) The Sobering History of the Gap Theory

My next point delves deeply into ancient historical Judaism. I considered condensing the following information, but it is really important for the reader to be able to follow what I am about to present here, so they can research it for themselves and respond to it accordingly. Thus I have divided this topic into two chapters: ‘The History of the Gap Theory’, and ‘The Gap Principle and its Kabbalah Connection’.

The information on where the gap theory originated is so sobering, it should make every gap creationist think very deeply about the creation narrative they have adopted and are promoting.

And Jesus said to the [Samaritan] woman, “God is Spirit, and those who worship Him must worship in spirit and truth.” (John 4:12,24)

*“For You have forsaken Your people, the house of Jacob, Because they are filled with eastern ways;
They are soothsayers like the Philistines, And they are pleased with the children of foreigners.”
(Is 2:6)*

CHAPTER 9

History of the Gap Theory

SYNOPSIS: Investigating the intriguing path of the esoteric origins of gap creationism – Voices from a smorgasbord of mystics – Ancient Jewish sages, the Babylonian Exile and a new creation myth – The origin of the Oral Law, the rise of Kabbalah and the subsequent evolution of gap creation – The rise of gap theory advocates and authorities in the 19th century – Fitting Scripture into the new science of evolutionary geology.

The practice of investigating source material and tracing a matter back to its origins plays an essential part in establishing the truth, as any investigative journalist or lawyer would know. And no more so than when it comes to Christian doctrines. Either the claims of various teachers are of value or they are not. And if they *are* considered valuable, what criteria are we using to appraise them?

Gap creationists turn to a number of controversial people in history who have questioned the plain reading of Gen 1:2, for example, **Origen** (a pagan philosopher), **Hugo St Victor** (a Catholic mystic), **Dionysius Peavius** (a Jesuit theologian), and **Benedict Pereira** (aka Pererius, who was a Jesuit philosopher and theologian). These are just some of the authorities used to support the gap theory (as seen in *Creation Or Evolution. Does It Really Matter What You Believe?*, United Church of God booklet, available online).

Seventeenth century Dutch theologian **Simon Episcopius** also believed in an old earth (although not much more from what I can gather). Episcopius' motivation for proposing this hypothesis was his own philosophical solution to his personal lack of understanding on how to fit the fall of angels into the Genesis creation narrative. His “idea” was then picked up and promoted by 19th and 20th century theologians in response to the then-new science of geology: (emphases added)

“While the gap theory was popularised by **Thomas Chalmers** in a lecture in 1814, the idea of a long period of time between Gen 1:1-2 was *first introduced* by the Dutch theologian Simon Episcopius (1583-1643) to accommodate the fall of the angels, and received scholarly treatment by J. G. Rosemuller (1736-1815).” (*Nature And Scripture In The Abrahamic Religions 1700 to Present, Vol 1*, edited by Jitse M. Van Der Meer and Scott Mandelbrote, 2008, p135.)

“Proponents of this form of creationism have included Oral Roberts, Cyrus I. Scofield, Harry Rimmer, Jimmy Swaggart, G. H. Pember, L. Allen Higley, Arthur Pink, Peter Ruckman, Finis Jennings Dake, Chuck Missler, E. W. Bullinger, Donald Grey Barnhouse, **Herbert W. Armstrong**, Garner Ted Armstrong and Clarence Larkin.” (en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Gap_creationism)

No Gap Theory Before the Early 1800s

One of the most highly esteemed authorities of all was the 20th century Bible Commentator **C. I. Scofield** (1823-1921). He was the first scholar to fill his annotated study Bible with a running commentary on every page and he became known as the first serious advocate for what was called the “gap theory”.

Bible commentator C. I. Scofield openly admitted his Reference Bible was trying to fit the Genesis creation account into modern evolutionary theory.

“Relegate [consign] fossils to the primitive creation, and *no conflict of science with the Genesis cosmogony remains.*” (C. I. Scofield, Scofield Reference Bible, 1945, p4.)

This was because scientific theory (in particular evolutionary geology) became the dictate of much Protestant theology during the 20th century, with regard to the timeframe of creation. Thus gap creationism (aka ruin-reconstruction theory, Lucifer’s flood, and the gap theory) was developed into a major doctrine and entered mainstream theology.

“Bible commentaries written before the Theory of Uniformitarianism and the scientific revolution of the early 1800s, are silent about the ‘Ruin-Reconstruction’ theory.” (advindicate.com/articles/2996)

Bohuw – Without Form and Void

A. C. Custance (1910-1985) was a Canadian physiologist and writer, and best known for his advocacy of the gap theory. And this is where it gets really interesting, because if we take a look at Custance’s book *Without Form and Void* (published in 1970), beginning at Chapter One, many of the authorities he refers to do not actually offer *any* support that Gen 1:1-2 is proof that Satan ruled the planet for billions of years before he (or God) destroyed it. Rather, they simply confirm that ***bohuw*** can be translated as “waste” or “laid waste”, both of which have been used in different versions of the Targum of Onkelos (the Aramaic translation of the Torah, circa 100AD), and Custance is misinterpreting this as proof of a former decimated planet.

But “laid waste” has a number of meanings in English. “laid” can mean “to put, or set down, to set in order” and “waste” can mean “anything unused, unproductive, or not properly utilised”, “a sparsely settled or barren region”, “uncultivated land”, “a broad and empty expanse”, all of which reflect the original Hebrew meaning of *bohuw* – “emptiness, void, waste”. So we could just as easily interpret Gen 1:2 as saying “the earth was set down as barren”. In other words, the first stage of the creation of the earth was that of being an unformed mass of water waiting for God to form and fill it (Gen 1:2).

One thing is sure, this gap creationist argument, as put forward by Custance, based on the meaning of *bohuw*, cannot be used as proof that the earth in Gen 1:2 had become a ravaged and desecrated planet.

But what interested me most about Custance was that his gap theory relied upon a number of mystical sources, going back some 2000 years.

In fact, it goes back even further, some 2500 years, as Custance himself explains in his book. This was around the time the Jewish people returned to their land from exile in Babylon. But who exactly were all these controversial Jewish people who began reading Genesis 1:2 differently to everyone else, and why should we listen to them? *The answer is very sobering to anyone who values God’s word above all others!* And if we look to one of the most important sources Custance has called upon to support his teaching on gap creation, it identifies two very prominent second-century Jewish sages!

Custance’s Smorgasbord of Mystics

Custance builds his case for gap creation by delving into murky corners to collect obscure quotations from a smorgasbord of mystics, even giving credit to *The Book of Jasher*, which he acknowledges is an 18th century forgery of the book mentioned in 2 Sam 1:18-27 and Jos 10:13. But it is his reference to a “comment” on Gen 2:4-6, written in the ancient work *The Book of Light*, which really caught my attention. This book, he says, shows there was destruction on the “previous creation”, but he admits this is “difficult to follow”. He attributes this “opinion” of a previous creation, which was destroyed, to a man called Simeon ben Jochai. Custance writes: (brackets and missing text in original)

“The ancient work known as *The Book of Light* or *Sefer Hazzohar*, sometimes simply *Zohar*, was traditionally ascribed to one of Akiba’s disciples, a certain **Simeon ben Jochai**. In this work, which

thus represents an opinion held towards the end of the first century and the early part of the second, there is a comment on **Gen 2:4-6**, which, though difficult to follow, reads thus:

‘These are the generations (ie., this is the history of....) of heaven and earth.... Now wherever there is written the word “these” the previous words are put aside. And these are the generations of the destruction which is signified in verse 2 of chapter 1. The earth was Tohu and Bohu. These indeed are the worlds of which it is said that the blessed God created them and destroyed them, and, on that account, the earth was desolate and empty.’” (A. Custance, *Without Form and Void*, p5)

And it should be no surprise that *The Book of Light* (also known as *Sefer ha-zohar* or the *Zohar*), is difficult to follow, because it is the foundational work of the literature of Jewish esoteric mysticism known as Kabbalah, which some people consider to be as holy as the Bible, or as the key to “unlock” God’s Word.

As for Custance’s above mention of Simeon ben Jochai, *he was the Jewish occult scholar who authored the Zohar*. This fact is often obscured by those who look to Custance as their authority in this matter. For example, one church that promotes the gap theory does not name Simeon ben Jochai in their literature, nor do they mention his and other occult influences behind this teaching, but simply refer ambiguously to its sources as being “Jewish sages”, as we read:

“The earliest known recorded controversy on this point [the gap theory] can be attributed to Jewish sages at the beginning of the second century” (*Creation Or Evolution. Does It Really Matter What You Believe?*, United Church of God booklet, available online.)

And although this church admits the gap theory *is* “controversial”, it has still embraced this mystical creation narrative as one of its most important doctrines, never to be questioned, as I myself and others have learnt.

Now if we take Simeon ben Jochai (also known as Yochai) and the *Zohar* out of the shadows and shine some light on this matter, the Encyclopedia Britannica explains:

“**Simeon ben Yochai**, (flourished 2nd century AD), Galilean tanna (i.e., one of a select group of Palestinian rabbinic teachers), one of the most eminent disciples of the martyred Rabbi **Akiba ben Joseph** and, traditionally, author of the *Zohar* (see *Sefer ha-zohar*), the most important work of Jewish mysticism. Little is known of Simeon’s life, and what is recorded of it in the Talmud is enmeshed with legend. (www.britannica.com/biography/Simeon-ben-Yochai)

“**Sefer ha-zohar**, (Hebrew: “*Book of Splendour*”), 13th-century book, mostly in Aramaic, that is the classic text of esoteric Jewish mysticism, or Kabbala. Though esoteric mysticism was taught by Jews as early as the 1st century AD, the *Zohar* gave new life and impetus to mystical speculations through the 14th and subsequent centuries. Many Kabbalists, in fact, invested the *Zohar* with a sanctity that is normally accorded only to the Torah and the Talmud.” (www.britannica.com/topic/Sefer-ha-zohar)

The Gap Theory’s Occult Origins

The Kabbalah is an occult philosophy that questions everything about the Bible and then twists the Scriptures to “reveal” arcane knowledge and special “revelations”. Kabbalah initiates study for years to learn its “ancient wisdom”.

“The wisdom of Kabbalah has been connected to religion, **mysticism, yoga, tarot cards, numerology, astrology, charms, amulets, magic** and that a person must be at least 40 years of age in order to study.” ([www.kabbalah.info/engkab/what_is_kabbalah/ what_is_kabbalah.htm#](http://www.kabbalah.info/engkab/what_is_kabbalah/what_is_kabbalah.htm#). WPSH2FKB0vA)

Many Kabbalah doctrines mirror those of “Christian” Gnosticism, including the creation account: (emphases added)

“While Kabbalah shares with Gnosticism a dramatic, historical point of view, it differs from it with regard to one crucial idea: the value that it places on the world of human fate and endeavour.”
(www.newkabbalah.com/gnos.html)

In other words, Custance saw merit in searching out the writings of forgeries and hard-core occult scholars and mystery religions, including the Kabbalah and Gnosticism, for support for the gap theory.

Working through Custance’s cabalistic reasoning (in *Without Form and Void*) has the reader sliding from one slippery enigmatic source to another (e.g. Sumerian and Babylonian fragments, rabbinical teachings, the mysterious Midrash) and I cannot help but see it as a fulfilment of 2 Tim 4:2-4:

“Preach the word! Be ready in season and out of season. Convince, rebuke, exhort, with all longsuffering and teaching. For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine, but according to their own desires, because they have itching ears, they will heap up for themselves teachers; and they will turn their ears away from the truth, and be turned aside to fables.”

Gap Creation and the Second Temple

Next I tried to find if there was a connection between the “gap theory” of the second century AD (as identified by Custance) going backwards in time to the building of the Second Temple (520 BC), as he had stated. That was when my trail petered out – until I received a communication from a gap creationist friend. However – and this is really important – *he insisted he did not believe in the gap theory but rather the gap principle!*

Exactly what the theological difference is I can’t say, because all the same arguments are used in both creation accounts. But my gap principle friend seemed to find comfort knowing it was a doctrine that predated 19th century evolutionism and therefore had no connection to it. He also found it reassuring that the gap principle reached far back into ancient Jewish history “being understood before the time of Ezra at the very least,” as he told me. But the really strange thing here is that he doesn’t seem to realise that this claimed antiquity does not give a teaching the stamp of truth. (After all, Satan’s sensational lies were at work 3400 years earlier than the building of the Second Temple – to the time of the Garden of Eden.)

The history of both the kingdoms – Israel to the north and Judah to the south – was a litany of ineffective, disobedient and corrupt kings (and many corrupt priests, too). Ancient Israel was notorious for its faithlessness and syncretising God’s truth with the pagan religions all around them.

“And Elijah came to all the people, and said, ‘How long will you falter between two opinions? If the LORD is God, follow Him; but if Baal, follow him.’ But the people answered him not a word.”
(1 Kings 18:21)

Ancient Israel committed spiritual adultery (idolatry) all throughout their wanderings in the Wilderness and up to Christ’s ministry. Consequently, God divorced the northern kingdom first, putting her away in 722BC by sending the Assyrians against her. Then in 585BC, when “her treacherous sister” Judah did not change her ways, the Lord sent the Babylonians to take the people into captivity (Jer 3:7-10, 20). Six hundred years later the Lord ended his Covenant with ancient Israel at his death and was thus free to marry a new people – the church (Matt 27:51).

God did bring the people of Judah back into their land 70 years after their Babylonian exile, but the line had been crossed. The Hebrew kingdom, which started with such promise and glory

through David, was now at an end. The damage was irreparable, until the birth of Messiah more than 500 years later. The monarchy had ended and the Jewish diaspora had begun.

“After the exile, Judah was politically rebuilt as a Persian satrapy, a semi-autonomous administrative province, ruled by a priestly elite that remigrated from Babylonia and whose views and attitudes were shaped by the religious blue-prints for reconstruction drafted in the exile”

(<http://www.bu.edu/mzank/Jerusalem/cp/exret.htm>)

While in Babylon, the Jews had creatively remade themselves and their world view in a human effort to preserve their identity. This was the time when the rise and development of the ancient Oral Law took place. This was also the time when Jewish sages saw the need to change biblical laws to accommodate their changing conditions. (emphases added)

“Ask many Orthodox and Conservative Jews about the origin of Judaism’s oral law and they will tell you that God revealed both the written and oral Torah to the Israelites through Moses at Sinai. Actually, the Bible only states that the Ten Commandments were revealed at Sinai. The rest of the Torah, with incidences that occurred after the Sinai revelation, was given at a later time in different places.

“Furthermore, while many Jews believe otherwise, *the interpretation of the Torah laws by the rabbis, called the oral law, developed long afterwards, when Jews recognized the need to modify the Torah teachings.* Rabbi Binyamin Lau, an Orthodox rabbi, discusses the development of the oral law during the second temple period in his book *The Sages.*” (booksnthoughts.com/what-is-the-origin-of-judaisms-oral-law/)

In this way, the Word of God was replaced with the doctrines and commandments of men, and God (in the hearts and minds of the people) was replaced with the ruling religious elite, later to become the Pharisees and Sadducees.

The Gap Principle Becomes the Gap Theory

When the Jews returned to their homeland, after two to three generations in Exile, there was a great resurgence to recapture their traditional roots, as they knew their captivity had been punishment from God, a result of their impurity. In their misguided fervour, however, the Exiles began to formulate the new religion of Judaism, with its focus on the many traditions, philosophies and prohibitions, as expressed by the teachers of the Oral Law. This was a man-made system of learning and establishing spiritual “truths” that are forever evolving independent of the Torah (which is considered too holy and difficult to understand).

Not only that but God’s Word, in this new religion, was said to be inaccessible to the people without special interpretation from the rabbis. Thus, by definition, the religion of Judaism was a mystery religion (which was very different to the Hebrew people being in a covenant relationship with God). Those Jews who did look to God and the Torah became the minority. This is evident from the books of the prophets – the *Ketuvim*. These were written by faithful Jewish men (or at least put into final form) during the period of Persian and Hellenistic rule, from the fifth to the second centuries BC.

Jewish history is complex and it is not my purpose to explore this matter in great depth. Suffice to say, questioning God’s creation account has always featured in Jewish mysticism. And by the time of the building of the Second Temple, creation mysticism gained ground. By the second century AD, these Jewish mystical teachings were being written down and recorded.

And once again we find ourselves back at the second century – which gap creationism identifies as the time when Jewish authorities wrote about the need to read Genesis 1 differently.

“Kabbalah is a term that refers to Jewish mysticism... All forms of Jewish mysticism, consistently appeal to scriptural authority, yet no mystical movement ever strayed further from theological orthodoxy than some forms of kabbalah. One of the early forms of Jewish mysticism is called **creation mysticism**... A key text in creation mysticism is *Sefer Yetzirah* ”The Book of Creation” from the **2nd century CE.**” (<http://www.world-religions-professor.com/kabbalah.html>)

From here the gap principle developed further, to resurface in 19th century Protestantism – now known as the gap theory.

In the next chapter I explore ‘The Gap Principle and Kabbalah Connection’. This is a must-read for any person who holds to the gap theory but who is also humble and willing to change if they can be shown to be in error. Alternatively, it will strengthen their resolve in this matter if they are able to find my arguments baseless.

This exploration has never been about me voicing my opinion. Rather it has been the end result of a five-year investigative journey – as I have sought to find and follow the path to truth, from God’s Word, *being prepared to go wherever it led*.

“This testimony is true. Therefore rebuke them sharply, that they may be sound in the faith, not giving heed to Jewish fables and commandments of men who turn from the truth.” (Titus 1:13-14)

“For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine, but according to their own desires, [because] they have itching ears, they will heap up for themselves teachers” (2 Tim 4:3)

CHAPTER 10

The Gap Principle and Kabbalah Connection

SYNOPSIS: Israelite mysticism: from the Exodus to the Exile – The birth of Judaism, which is not based on the Old Testament (Tanakh) – What is the difference between the Written Law and the Oral Law? – The origin of the sect of the Pharisees – Esoteric philosophy leads to Hassidic Judaism – Arthur Custance and the gap theory’s reliance on occult scholars – Exploring the Hindu-Kabbalah-Rabbinic Judaism-gap theory connection.

This chapter takes the reader on an investigative journey, following various streams of ancient Jewish philosophy that all connect to one source – the Oral Law. I also trace the gap creation narrative back to its heart and core – where it originated.

Arguments about “*bara, hayah, tohuw, bohuw* and *asah*”, and every other “proof” for the gap theory, collapse in a heap in light of this understanding, as it unmasks the enormity of this deception. But from my experience, most (although not all) gap creationists have refused to enter into discussing the origin of their adopted creation narrative. And I can only surmise that they are not interested, or do not want to search out the truth, preferring to hold onto a treasured belief because they are comfortable with it and convinced they could not be deceived.

But our Christian faith demands that we “test all things; hold fast what is good” and God instructs us to be workers “rightly dividing the word of truth” (2 Tim 2:15; 1 Thess 5:21). These characteristics are vital if we are to grow in truth and grace and knowledge, as God commands (2 Pet 3:18; Col 2:8; Mark 7:8).

Israel – from Egypt to the Exile

Israel’s dabbling in mysticism reaches into antiquity (around 3500 years ago). It can be traced back to the tribes of Israel during their time in Egypt, to the Exodus and their wandering in the Wilderness, and the influence of Zoroastrian Babylonians while exiled in Babylon.

“How did Zoroastrian ideas find their way into the Abrahamic faiths and elsewhere? According to scholars, many of these concepts were introduced to the Jews of Babylon upon being liberated by the Persian emperor Cyrus the Great. They trickled into mainstream Jewish thought...”
(<http://www.bbc.com/culture/story/20170406-this-obscure-religion-shaped-the-west>).

Throughout their history, ancient Israel adopted all manner of pagan philosophies, but something particular happened during their Babylonian Exile (598 BC). Over those 70 years, Jewish sages added philosophies from the Babylonian mystery religion to their own mystical fables and by the time of the building of the Second Temple, the seeds of the Oral Tradition were sown.

This included esoteric Kabbalah thought and the rise of a new religion that heralded the birth of Judaism.

“The deported Jews formed their own community in Babylon and retained their religion, practices and philosophies. Some, it would seem, adopted the Chaldean religion (for they name their offspring after Chaldean gods)... They called themselves the ‘gola’ (‘exiles’)... and within the crucible of despair and hopelessness, they forged a new national identity and a new religion.”
(www.jewishvirtuallibrary.org/the-babylonian-exile)

Judaism today sees great value in its Babylonian-Kabbalah origins.

“The Jewish Theological Seminary represents Conservative Judaism in America. Historically, Conservative Judaism has upheld the divine inspiration of the **Babylonian Talmud and the Zohar** [foundational literature of Kabbalah] as the ultimate religious and ethical authority for Jews, far surpassing the Old Testament”. (<https://www.truthtellers.org/alerts/JewishGalleryPissChristExhibit.html>)

The Oral Law Esteemed Higher Than the Written Law

According to Jewish tradition there are TWO holy books – and the book that has been esteemed the most important is not the Torah (Written Word) but the Talmud (Oral Tradition), as the Jewish website below explains (emphasis added):

“There are two ‘Torahs’: the Written and the Oral. In *Jewish tradition*, both were given to Moses at Mt. Sinai, during the forty years in the desert, and taught to the whole nation. In fact, when Judaism says ‘G-d gave the Torah to Moses at Sinai’ it is talking only about the Oral.” (torah.org/learning/basics-primer-torah-oraltorah)

But the Oral Tradition (or Oral Law) is not the same as the “oracles of God” referred to in the Hebrew Bible. Rather, they are the utterings of some of religious leaders who believed they had more knowledge than Moses (or that they could expound on Moses’ teachings). And it needs to be remembered that there has never been a shortage of people in ancient Israel who claimed their teachings were equal in status, or superior, to Moses’s teachings – even Moses’ own brother and sister at one point. So serious was the contention at times that God had to step in to resolve it. In the case of Aaron and Miriam, the Lord confronted their arrogance for attempting to exalt their ideas and opinions over Moses’ teachings. Afterwards, He struck Miriam down with leprosy (healing her later after she repented).

“So they [Miriam and Aaron] said, ‘Has the LORD indeed spoken only through Moses? Has He not spoken through us also?’ And the LORD heard it. ... Suddenly the LORD said to Moses, Aaron, and Miriam, ‘Come out, you three, to the tabernacle of meeting!’ So the three came out. Then the LORD came down in the pillar of cloud and stood in the door of the tabernacle, and called Aaron and Miriam. And they both went forward. Then He said, ‘Hear now My words: If there is a prophet among you, I, the LORD, make Myself known to him in a vision; I speak to him in a dream.

‘Not so with My servant Moses; He is faithful in all My house. I speak with him face to face, Even **plainly, and not in dark sayings**; And he sees the form of the LORD. Why then **were you not afraid to speak against My servant Moses?**’ So the anger of the LORD was aroused against them, and He departed. And when the cloud departed from above the tabernacle, suddenly Miriam became leprous, as white as snow. Then Aaron turned toward Miriam, and there she was, a leper.” (Num 12:2,4-10, emphases added)

Another example is that of the sons of Levi, when Korah and 250 of the most renowned religious leaders in the congregation rose up against Moses, claiming they were just as holy and equally worthy of his status as God’s spokesmen. Again the anger of the Lord was aroused and he caused the earth to open up to consume all of them (Numbers 16).

Nevertheless, according to the gap theory, Moses (who penned the Torah) must have missed the important point of God telling him about the “Renovation”. This is because Moses does not call this earth a **Renovation** or a **Re-creation** and that all things were **Re-made**, but CLEARLY described it as a **Creation** that was **Made!**

“And God blessed the seventh day, and sanctified it: because that in it he had rested from all his work which God **created** and **made**. These are the generations of the heavens and of the earth when they were **created**, in the day that the LORD God **made** the earth and the heavens” (**Gen 2:3-4**).

So for the gap theory to be true, either Moses was talking in “dark sayings” or “riddles”, as some Bible versions interpret it, or those who have questioned his explanation have a greater knowledge – both of which are claims that cause God’s wrath to burn.

The Difference Between the Tanakah, the Torah and the Talmud

The Hebrew Bible in its entirety is known as the **Tanakh**, which consists of three divisions: the **Law** (*Torah*), the **Prophets** (*Nevi'im*) and the **Writings** (*Ketuvim*). The word **Tanakh** is an acronym derived from the names of these three divisions (known collectively in Christianity as the **Old Testament**). These oracles of God were received by the Hebrews and *written down, and faithfully copied and preserved* for us today (Rom 3:1-4). Throughout the Bible, we read, “as it is written in the book of the law”, and “as it is written in the book of the covenant”, and “as it is written by the prophets”.

Now let us compare this with the “two holy books” in Jewish tradition, mentioned earlier. One is the **Torah** (Written Word) and the other is the **Talmud** (Oral Tradition or Oral Law).

The **Torah** is the book of the **Law**, given to Moses at Sinai, which constitutes the first five books of the Hebrew Bible (also known as the *Pentateuch*).

The **Talmud**, on the other hand, was penned in the 4th century AD and is a compilation of the interpretations, writings and philosophies of Jewish rabbis *commenting about the Hebrew Bible* (**Tanakh**). It contains the major repositories of the Oral Law found, the Mishnah and the Gemara.

“**Talmud**: The body of Jewish civil and ceremonial law and legend comprising the **Mishnah** and the **Gemara**. There are two versions of the Talmud: the **Babylonian Talmud** (which dates from the 5th century AD but includes earlier material), and the earlier Palestinian or **Jerusalem Talmud**.” (en.oxforddictionaries.com/definition/talmud)

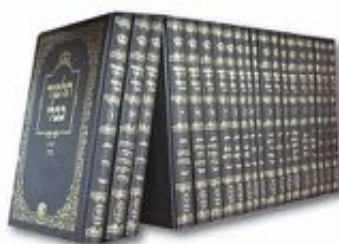
Torah or Talmud?



God's Word

Tanakh (Hebrew Bible)
consists of three divisions:

- The Law (*Torah*) – the five books of Moses (i.e. Pentateuch)
- The prophets and historical works (*Nevi'im*)
- The writings: religious poetry and wisdom literature (*Ketuvim*).



Man's words

Talmud (Commentary on the Torah)

- Compiled between the 4th and 6th centuries AD, the Talmud is a Jewish commentary. It is a collection of writings that covers the Jewish law and tradition; a body of Jewish civil and ceremonial law and legend comprising the Mishnah and the Gemara.

An example of the teachings found in the Talmud is that of Lilith, a notorious demon in Jewish tradition.

“In the Talmud, Lilith becomes not only a spirit of darkness, but also a figure of uncontrolled sexuality.” ([www.myjewishlearning.com /article/lilith-lady-flying-in-darkness](http://www.myjewishlearning.com/article/lilith-lady-flying-in-darkness))

Harry Gersh, author of *The Sacred Books of the Jews*, writes that the rabbis who contributed to the Talmud did not maintain pure biblical doctrine, especially on the matter of creation.

“The Rabbis of the Talmud speculated on these mysteries, particularly when they were commenting on Genesis and the visions of Ezekiel. The speculations were later embroidered by new ideas that entered Jewish thought from the Syriac Greeks, the Zoroastrian Babylonians, and the Gnostic sect of the Byzantium Christians. From these foreign and domestic concepts and myths, the Jews wove into their mysticism ideas of upper and neither worlds, angels, and demons, ghosts and spirits – ideas that had been unknown or of little importance to the Jews until then.” (Harry Gersh *The Sacred Books of the Jews*, 1968, p200)

The Time of the Second Temple

At the time of the building of the Second Temple, the then-new religion of Judaism elevated the mystical teachings of cabalistic sages (the Oral Law) as more valuable and insightful than the Hebrew Bible itself. So revered and entrenched did these Oral Traditions become, in the new religion of Judaism, that they eclipsed the Tanakh – the Hebrew Bible. That is why the religious leaders did not recognise the Son of God when he walked among them. And when the Pharisees and Sadducees plotted against Jesus and tried to entangle him so they could arrest him, Jesus answered and said to them:

“You are mistaken, not knowing the Scriptures nor the power of God” (Matt 22:29).

And over time, as the people relied more and more on their teachers of the Oral Law, their understanding of Scripture waned:

“The Written Law is somewhat cryptic and requires explanation”
(www.chabad.org/library/article_cdo/aid/361876/jewish/The-Oral-Tradition.htm).

But it is not God’s Word (the Tanakh) that is cryptic and needs deciphering, it is the esoteric writings of the Jewish sages (the Talmud). This statement by the Jewish religious leaders, of course, reinforces the people’s belief that they need to rely on their teachers to interpret and understand God’s Word, when in reality they are being led further and further away from it. In this way, the Jewish religious leaders hold the people captive. (This is the same in some churches and among many deceptive Christian leaders, too.)

The Kabbalah (the most mystical arm of Judaism) is a subculture embedded within and among mainstream rabbinic Judaism, and I focus on this for a very good reason, as will become apparent further on. It is a religious movement that relies on the esoteric Oral Tradition and searches out “hidden meanings” buried in the text of the Bible.

“The word Kabbalah is based on the Hebrew term קַבָּלָה, meaning ‘reception’. This rabbinic method of interpretation of the Torah is ‘received’ by oral tradition, supposedly back to Moses and ultimately God. The mystical esoteric ‘soul’ of the Torah is ‘received’ in the form of special insights giving the initiate hidden meanings of the text. These hidden meanings are esoteric knowledge of the divine nature, His creation of the universe, and His laws governing nature. These insights are considered special knowledge of secret meanings received by oral tradition, meanings not obvious to the reader of the text using normal linguistic grammatical exegesis.” (scholar.ufs.ac.za:8080/xmlui/bitstream/handle/11660/740/ArnoldTP.pdf?sequence=1&isAllowed=y)

Although not all religious Jews are Kabbalists, the vast majority do not read their Bibles but follow what their Talmudic rabbis and their traditions teach them:

“The Pharisees did not feel bound by what is written in the Bible but by the Bible as understood according to the Jewish rabbinic tradition. The Talmudic rabbis were ideological descendants of the Pharisees. Thus, in traditional **Judaism we as Jews live not by what is written in the Bible (the Written Torah) but by the Bible as interpreted and understood by the Jewish rabbinic tradition (the Oral Torah).**” (This emphasizes in the original).

“Those teachers have to be scholars themselves, who are thoroughly versed in Jewish rabbinic texts that have been written over the course of centuries and continue to be written to this very day, who are authorized by their teachers to have studied Jewish law and tradition, and have to be accepted by Jews and Jewish communities as being fit for communal leadership.” (www.quora.com/Do-Jews-follow-the-Talmud-or-the-Torah-or-both)

Kabbalah Questions Everything About the Hebrew Bible

The Kabbalah claims that every letter in the Hebrew Bible has a numerical value and every word has a sum, and that these have special meanings and significances. Thus it practices the “art” of plumbing the meaning of the individual words of the Torah using a human-derived secret code. (Refer www.myjewishlearning.com/article/midrash-101. Note: the Midrash is part of the Oral Tradition/Talmud.)

“The typical Midrashic way of looking for multiple meanings in the Torah can be seen in how the Midrash approaches the first verse in the Torah: each word, even the individual letters are filled with meanings beyond compare.” (users.abo.fi/htoyryla/creart6.pdf)

An example of how the Midrash looks for other “meanings in the Torah” and how it “*approaches the first verse of the Torah*” is in the teaching that “In THE beginning” should be translated “In A beginning” (kehillatisrael.net/docs/dt/dt_bereshit.html; emphasis added). This is because the Midrash teaches that God created many worlds until he was satisfied with this one. I found this fascinating, because one of my gap creation friends has used this very argument in his alternative reading of a number of words in Genesis 1 – that this present world may be one of many.

However, as critics explain, this searching for “deeper meanings” at the word and even letter level changes the scale set of God’s communications from primary to non-contextual.

Thus it loses the crucial text-based semantic and syntactic God-given control we have over the actual meaning of the text as preserved in the manuscripts.

With regard to the history of the new religion of Judaism, it emerged, as previously explained, at the time of the Babylonian captivity.

After the Exiles returned to the land of Judah, their mystical sages (occult philosophers) began to gain prominence over the priests and the “religion of Judaism” took hold. This was the beginning of a total departure from “Israel being in a covenant relationship with God” and the God-ordained function of the priesthood. And, over the centuries, more and more syncretism crept into their Jewish traditions, as Egyptian, Greek and Roman mysteries were added to their Babylonian mysteries, and mystical Jewish thought continued to evolve, branching into its very own specific mystery religion.

The Origin of the Sadducees and Pharisees

The **Sadducees** were the party of high priests, aristocratic families and merchants – the wealthier elements of the population. However, not much is known about their early history. They were a Jewish priestly sect that flourished for about two centuries before the destruction of the Second Temple of Jerusalem in AD 70.

They were haughty, wealthy and dominated the Temple and its priesthood. The Sadducees were influenced by Hellenism and collaborated with Rome while under its occupation. However, unlike the Pharisees, the Sadducees refused to go beyond the Torah. “For the Sadducees, the Oral Law – *i.e.*, the vast body of post-biblical Jewish legal traditions – meant next to nothing”. (Refer <https://www.britannica.com/topic/Sadducee>)

As for the sect of **Pharisees**, they are thought to have originated in the 3rd century B.C. in the days preceding the Maccabean wars. While the Jews were under Greek domination, and the Greeks sought to Hellenize them, there was a strong tendency among the Jews to accept Greek culture with its pagan religious customs. (There was constant conflict between the Sadducees and the Pharisees.)

The Pharisees held to the esoteric principle that God gave the Oral Law to Moses when he was on Mount Sinai and believed that knowledge of God evolved through human reasoning.

And I find it interesting that Jesus specifically singled out for criticism the Pharisees and the scribes, who were the teachers of the Oral Law (later to be compiled as the Talmud).

“They interpreted Written Torah according to what they believed the text suggested or implied... they reinterpreted its meaning, seeking scriptural support for their actions through a system of hermeneutics” (jewishrootschristianity.ca).

By the time of Herod’s reign, these Jewish religious leaders had become so deeply corrupted that Jesus ripped into the them more than any other.

“During the time of Jesus the oral law came to be revered so highly that it was said to go back to Moses himself and to have been transmitted over the centuries orally, paralleling the written law that also derived from him. This is exactly what the Pharisees believed, and also it was these ‘traditions’ that Jesus condemned...” (www.bible-history.com/pharisees/PHARISEESTradition.htm)

In Matthew 23, Jesus declared “Woe” to the Pharisees, again and again. This is the Greek word *ouai*, which means “exclamation of pain and anger”. Jesus was grieved and deeply sorrowful, because these religious leaders were hardhearted and cold hypocrites and they led the people astray. They claimed to represent God and His Word but their father was the devil, they followed the corrupt Oral Traditions and the teachings of men, and they deceived the people (John 8:44; Matt 15:1-9).

Jesus spurned these teachings and spoke straight from the Scriptures and the people were astounded by the simple truths found in God’s Word.

They had never heard anything like it. He spoke with the power of God and they flocked to listen to him (Mark 11:18; Luke 4:32). But the religious leaders hated him for it, as it took away their power over the people. Jesus also warned his disciples against the teachings of the scribes and the Pharisees (Matt 23).

In the second century AD, cabalistic sages were the first scholars to write down and preserve their oral traditions in their foundational religious literature, aka “wisdom literature” – the *Zohar*.

And I can’t help but think what a great blessing it was that God had not allowed this to take place *before* the Hebrew Bible and New Testament had been completed, so as to be able to separate God’s Holy Scriptures from the written counterfeits to come. One of those counterfeits being creation myths, casting doubt on God’s own words and explanations in Genesis 1.

“One of the early forms of Jewish mysticism is called **creation mysticism**, which focused on the mysterious methods God used to create the world. It describes the creation of the world through the arrangement of particular letters and numbers. A key text in creation mysticism is *Sefer Yetzirah* ‘The Book of Creation’ from the 2nd cent CE.” (www.world-religions-professor.com/kabbalah.html)

Custance Sees Value in Occult Scholars

In Chapter 9 ‘The History of the Gap Theory’, I explain in some detail the history of the *Zohar* (aka *The Book of Light*). This is a literary work that is foundational in gap creationism, as expressed by Arthur C. Custance in his book, *Without Form and Void: A Study of the Meaning of Genesis*. I will be referring to the *Zohar* often throughout this chapter.

The *Zohar* – a mystical commentary on the Torah – was penned in the second century AD and it constitutes the most esoteric form of Judaism. This is because it claims to have specially revealed knowledge that explains everything from an exo-biblical perspective.

“Revealed more than 2,000 years ago, the *Zohar* is a spiritual text that explains the secrets of the Bible, the Universe and every aspect of life. (<http://www.zohar.com/article/what-zohar>)

Simeon ben Jochai (aka Yohai) was the occult scholar who wrote the *Zohar*. A student of Simeon ben Yohai’s, **Rabbi Yehudah HaNasi**, was the then-editor of the **Mishnah**, which incorporated the teachings of the Pharisees on Jewish law. This was the first written record of the rabbinic traditions of the Oral Law, also known as the Oral Tradition, and later formed part of the Talmud. The second century AD also saw the beginning of Rabbinic Judaism and by the 6th century it had become mainstream.

“**Rabbinic Judaism**: the normative form of Judaism that developed after the fall of the Temple of Jerusalem (AD 70). Originating in the work of the Pharisaic rabbis, it was based on the legal and commentative literature in the Talmud, and it set up a mode of worship and a life discipline that were to be practiced by Jews worldwide down to modern times.” (<https://www.britannica.com/topic/Rabbinic-Judaism>)

Thus Kabbalah and Rabbinic Judaism are interconnected, as they each flow from the Jewish mystery religion, which can be traced back to the teachings of the Pharisees, and the time of the Babylonian captivity and further, to the Oral teachings at the time of Moses, and even before the Exodus.

This occult link between the Zohar, the Mishnah and the Talmud is profound.

(The Midrash is part of the teaching of the Mishnah.)

The Oral Law in Judaism is entirely different to the written Torah of the Hebrews and the Mosaic Law.

Today, there are many different movements, branches, trends, streams and even flavours of Judaism, but most have developed from the esoteric Pharisaic movement some 2200 years ago, and their primary authorities are the writings of the Oral Law – aka the Talmudic traditions.

In other words most teachings in Judaism today (and going back some 3500 years) have become indistinguishable from ancient Jewish occult mysticism, having been around before the time of Moses and gaining momentum after the Exile.

Thus anyone who views these literary sources as enlightened knowledge is deceived. And Christians need to separate themselves from these occult teachings – not try to “learn” something from them!

Considering all of this, let us return to Custance's book promoting the gap theory – *Without Form and Void: A Study of the Meaning of Genesis*. Here he places a high value in the “traditional teachings” of the Jewish mystery religion, which emerged after the Babylonian captivity, as well as the occult teachings of the Midrash.

“Now after or during the **Babylonian Captivity**, the Jewish people gradually accumulated the comments and explanations of their best-known teachers *about* the Old Testament for some 1500 years - or well on into the Christian era. This body of traditional teaching was gathered together into the **Midrash**, which thus became the oldest pre-Christian exposition of the Old Testament.” (Arthur Custance, *Without Form, and Void*, p5; emphases added)

Notice that?

Custance knows *exactly* what he is doing in steering people away from the occult origins of the gap theory, by skilfully utilising the devil's tactics of deception, claiming these sources are the “best known teachers about the Old Testament” which “became the oldest pre-Christian exposition of the Old Testament”.

Kabbalah's Four Levels of “Enlightenment”

There are four levels of “enlightenment” in Kabbalah: *peshat*, *remez*, *drash* and *sod*, with each level taking a person further from the Bible and deeper into spiritual mysteries and fantastical tales. As with any secret society or mystery religion, a person doesn't realise they are entering hard-core occultism until they reach the upper level, which is indecipherable to outsiders, and by then they are convinced it is true.

“The second level [of Kabbalah] is *remez*, which means *hint*. This refers to interpretations of the Torah that are not stated explicitly but are rather only hinted at in the text.”
(www.thejc.com/judaism/books/the-origins-of-kabbalah-1.6753)

And it seems to me that Custance, in his book *Without Form and Void*, is covertly operating on the subtler *remez* level. The reason I say this is because he is skilled in the English language and has littered his book with expressions contrived to get the reader to question the words that God has used. (Ring any bells – Gen 3:5?) He does this by enticing his readers to listen to the voices of sources who tell us *what God really meant*, according to “comments”, “explanations”, “hints”, “expositions”, “intimations”, “indicators”, “interpretations”, “views”, “beliefs” and “opinions” – all words used by Custance in arguing his case for the gap theory.

And I would like to add that my gap principle friend utilises similar language, claiming that the gap in Genesis is not explicitly written in Scripture, rather it is “inferred”.

By his own admission, Arthur Custance acknowledges he has no evidence the apostles believed and taught gap creationism but rather makes the valueless claim: “The apostle *Paul must have known about it*”.

The reader needs to understand this is not the way God's truth is communicated. Rather, it is slippery speak that comes from someplace else!

By the 1400s, the most esoteric form of Judaism became known as the religion of Kabbalah.

Most Kabbalah teachings are obfuscated – cryptic and coded, and indecipherable and inaccessible to the uninitiated, which is the essence of any occult mystery religion.

Today, Kabbalah has permeated every sector of contemporary Judaism, and most rabbis are mystics to some degree. Kabbalah centres are located all over modern Israel and people visit them from

around the world, expecting to be spiritually enlightened. Contemporary Kabbalah is most closely associated with the Ultra-Orthodox, due to its rise in popularity after the birth of Chasidism in the 1700s.

And it is no wonder many Jews have embraced occultism. This is because Satan hates God's chosen people of the Book and his focus has always been to lead them astray.

As a consequence of their continued unfaithfulness, as detailed in the Scriptures, the Lord ended his marriage with ancient Israel 2500 years ago, when He put her away at the time of the Babylonian captivity. However, God still holds a very special place for them, because of the fathers and His promises to them. And he tells us that the time will come when they will be given a "new heart" and a "new spirit" and they will know that "I am the Lord" – (Eze 36:26; Eze 11:19).

Also, the apostle Paul tells Christians that God has not "cast away His people". Rather, He has blinded them for a time, so that "salvation has come to the Gentiles... until the fullness of the Gentiles has come" (Romans 11). And Paul warns Christians not to become haughty of this fact, because they have been grafted into the olive tree and can just as easily be removed.

"And if some of the branches were broken off, and you, being a wild olive tree, were grafted in among them, and with them became a partaker of the root and fatness of the olive tree, do not boast against the branches. But if you do boast, remember that you do not support the root, but the root supports you" (Rom 11:17-18).

Kabbalah – an Ancient Earth but Not Evolution

A dictionary description of Kabbalah describes its occult roots and practices:

"Kabbalah: The ancient Jewish tradition of mystical interpretation of the Bible, first transmitted orally and using esoteric methods (including ciphers). It reached the height of its influence in the later Middle Ages and remains significant in Hasidism." (en.oxforddictionaries.com/definition/us/kabbalah)

The Kabbalah's doctrine on creation is fuzzy, open to individual interpretation and mystical to the core... As with any esoteric religion, there is much discussion and little agreement. But the general consensus in Kabbalah is that the earth is ancient, but Darwinian evolution is unproven.

"Relatively old Kabbalistic sources, from well before the scientifically apparent age of the universe was first determined, are in close concord with modern scientific estimates of the age of the universe, according to Rabbi Aryeh Kaplan." (cs.mcgill.ca/~rwest/ wikispeedia/wpcd/wp/c/Creationism.htm)

"So while it seems clear that natural selection can account for things like beak size, moth coloration and the like (microevolution), the notion that all species have evolved from a single common ancestor (macroevolution) appears to be incomplete" (https://www.huffingtonpost.com/rabbi-adam-jacobs/a-kabbalistic-view-of-evo_b_846334.html).

And the interesting thing is this: Kabbalah teaches a form of the gap theory.

Trying to understand occult teachings, which are a formulation of demonically constructed lies covered with layers of murkiness, is like trying to paddle in mud.

However, I was fortunate to find a Kabbalah website that presents its esoteric version of creation, which is hard going as Cusance himself admitted (refer Chapter 9), in a simpler language for the uninitiated.

Of significance is the fact that it rejects young earth creation in the harshest terms, by pouring scorn on the “restrictive” traditional Jewish religious establishment [Hivemind]. It admits that Kabbalah is a “controversial” reading of the Bible, but instructs us to break free from the “well-constructed strong box” of the “literalists” and “fundamentalist [Hebrew] camp”. This is because the genealogies of the Bible are “not accurate” – the mysterious Kabbalah interpretations are, and thus the Bible passages need to be “corrected”. And if we do not wish to be “ignorant” we would be wise to look to ancient “Jewish sages” and our own ability to question “outside of approved parameters” of Scripture for true enlightenment.

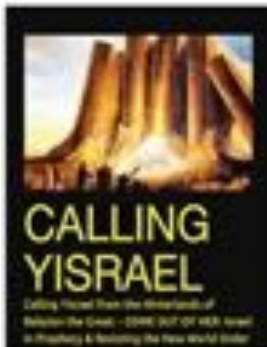
It refers to the “creation” and the “re-creation”. This creation, according to the “early mystics in Judaism”, is described as a “Second Creation Story”, because the first ended in “desolation and horror”. We are told that Kabbalists have been given special revelation to decipher the secret code of the Bible.

Of particular interest, the Kabbalah version of creation uses all the same arguments as gap creationism for the “correct” interpretation of *bara*, *tohuw* and *bohuw* (along with *hayah* and *asah*, as seen on its website), as well as the approved Kabbalah words “restoration and reformation”, which are found nowhere in God’s Word. (Except in the future tense, for example, in **Acts 3:21**, which speaks about the “restoration of all things” when Christ returns.) It also agrees with the findings of modern science (based on the philosophy of naturalism) regarding the age of the earth. (Italics in original; square brackets and underline added.)

Gap Creation – a Doctrine of the Kabbalah

Below, I have pieced together excerpts from the website: “Calling Yisrael”:

Worlds Before Worlds and the Cycle of Time



"Though the first verse of the Torah is normally translated 'In the beginning', there is good reason to question it ... [there is] the possibility of previous cycles of creation and re-creation that not only the ancient sacred texts of the nations speak of but that the teachers of Israel have also spoken of ... we feel we should start off at the very beginning of Scripture - B'reisheet or Genesis chapter one ...

"It is here that we shall begin our challenge to the entrenched Establishment Hivemind [group think] that has so dominated our society and related our capacity for thoughtful investigation to a well con-structed strong box...

"Any investigation outside of approved parameters is highly discouraged and those who ignore the establishment guidelines are ostracised, maligned and ridiculed by their peers.

"Many people have been taught that the six creation days in Genesis are a literal description of the Earth's geologic history... This is simply misguided teaching. ... Chazal - our Jewish sages, have long maintained that only children, and those of only simple understanding, should take the account of creation in Genesis as a literal period of six 24-hour days, and that the wise should come to understand that the narrative expresses the deep structure of a mysterious, divinely ordered process reflected in physical reality, but not so simply as the literalists take it to be.

"The geologic record shows that the Earth existed long before the six days of Genesis and long before the creation of man. Contrary to certain traditions, it is not possible to get an accurate dating based on counting the genealogies of the Bible. One prime impediment to such an undertaking is the time-gap between the first two verses of Genesis. While controversial to the established mindset of our society, the Gap Principle goes a long way in settling disturbing problems with the 6000-year thesis of the religious fundamentalist camp, and demonstrates a very different earth history for the secular Old Earth camp [biological evolution].

"The Genesis narrative speaks of at least two separate creation events, one of the perfection beauty, the other as desolation and horror. Gen 1:1 is the perfection of God's creation... We are told that in the beginning God created the heaven and the earth; but Torah never affirms that He did this in the six days following verse one. The work of those days were times of restoration and reformation. This is demonstrated by the use bara... They were already in existence, having been originally created in Gen 1:1 before the destruction in Gen 1:2 ... Gen 2:4 to 2:5 is known as the Second Creation Story.

"The early mystics of Judaism found within the text of the Torah itself, through the study of equidistant letter sequences (ELS), that the age of the universe was over 15 billion years old. This was centuries before modern science came to that same conclusion. ... According to most traditions, the earth was without form, and void. This, however, is not a reflection of the Hebrew, but a glaring illustration of the influence of the establishment hivemind [group think].

"The words translated as without form and void are translations of two Hebrew words - tohu and bohu meaning ruin and desolation and emptiness respectively. Clearly tohu and bohu is a phrase which references a past cataclysm prior to the creation of Man. As such, the passage should be corrected to say that the earth became a des-olate ruin and empty. (israelinprophecy.wordpress.com/category/the-gap-principle)"

A Hindu-Gap-Theory Connection

Kabbalah has, apparently, always had a lot of knowledge on gap creationism – the conjectured world before Adam:

“The Kabbalists have always had profound insight and *understanding into the nature of these pre-Adamic worlds.*” (www.scribd.com/document/257036376/shemitot).

And it is not just Jewish fables (Titus 1:14) that believe in an ancient earth and re-creations out of chaos – Hinduism does, too:

“In Hindu cosmology, the universe is cyclically created and destroyed... There are multiple universes, each takes birth from chaos... to be reborn again ...” (en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Hindu_cosmology#cite_note-0-1)

It is no coincidence that ancient mystery religions, Eastern spirituality and old-age evolutionary philosophy are in such agreement. That is why it is crucially important to know the history and origin of any doctrine we feel led to adopt that requires us to alter words found in the Bible and thus the interpretation of Scripture. This creation teaching has even gone so far as to distort the gospel message of certain churches, too (refer to Chapter 4, ‘The Devil Cast to Earth’).

Interestingly, the Torah Institute has a booklet explaining the close connection between Eastern mysticism, Hinduism, the Pharisees, Gnosticism, the Kabbalah, the Oral Traditions, and Rabbinical Judaism and its esoteric (“hidden knowledge” occult) approach to interpreting the Hebrew Scriptures.

“During the 1st and 2nd centuries, HINDU MYSTICISM from the far east invaded the Middle East. Also known as Gnosticism, the new mystical approach to fulfillment became focused on learning ‘secret codes’. Receiving the ‘inner consciousness’ that ‘all things spiritual are perfect’ and ‘all things material are defiled’ became the foundational teaching. To achieve perfection, one had to yoke with ‘forces’ to be guided toward fulfillment.

“The Pharisees believed in spirits and the unseen realm, and adapted the new understandings to their own traditions and interpretation of Torah. The rabbi-pupil model was a perfect setting to ‘receive’ (kabbalah) the eastern mysticism. New mystical interpretations of the Torah and ‘traditions of the fathers’ became the filter through which one might learn hidden secrets.

Today this discipline is called KABBALAH, based on writings from the 13th century called The Zohar. Does Yahusha withhold secret knowledge, or did Yahusha, Paul, and Yahukanon confront this long ago?” (www.torahzone.net/Kabbalah-Article-10-copies.html)

This intimate connection between these ancient and modern mysteries is easily explained – it has originated from the same ungodly source (Rev 12:9).

We can see further evidence of this mystical-evolutionary connection (in quantum theory) at the European Organisation for Nuclear Research (CERN) building in Geneva, where a statue of the Hindu ‘god’ Shiva has been placed outside, a gift from the Indian government.

Interestingly, Shiva is also known as the Dancing God and the Destroyer who made this world and when it was plunged into darkness and chaos, he restored it.

The similarities between these philosophies are not coincidences but reconfigurations of the same pagan ideas.

All People Have Truths?

According to defenders of the gap theory, whom I have spoken with, all peoples have some truth, therefore we should not reject gap creationism just because occultists believe in it. This, however, is dangerous reasoning, because any claimed source of “hidden knowledge” outside the Scriptures cannot be trusted. And it stands to reason that the devil has far more success in deceiving believers through (deceived or false) Christian teachers than through direct occult sources.

Placing one’s trust in a biblical scholar such as Arthur Custance is a perfect case in point. How many gap creationists realise (or even care) that his information relies on occult scholars and esoteric material from the very teachings Jesus condemned?

God warns his people that we can be deceived and this should concern us (Matt 24:4; 2 Tim 4:3-4). So if any teaching requires us to *alter or twist the meaning of the words God has given us, in any way*, then we have a falsehood:

“... which untaught and unstable people twist to their own destruction, as they do also the rest of the Scriptures. You therefore, beloved, since you know this beforehand, beware lest you also fall from your own steadfastness, being led away with the error of the wicked;” (2 Pet 3:16-17).

Without this safeguard, we are open to all kinds of deceptions, which takes us back to the importance of being a Berean and putting God’s Word above all others, because “the entirety of your word is truth” (Ps 119:160; John 17:17; Ps 33:4). And this must be a constant checking process throughout our lives, as a complacent Christian is in danger of being unprepared or seriously misled (Matt 25:1-13; Zeph 1:12; Rev 3:15-18).

The fact is, Moses and the ancient Hebrews did not teach gap creationism (Ex 20:11; Rev 21:1) and Jewish occult scholars do. And they admit it is based on a controversial reading of certain words in Genesis 1:1-2. This they support using only a handful of verses taken out of context, which conflict with the remaining Scriptures. (E.g. Nowhere in the Bible is the Genesis 1 creation called a “renovation” or “re-creation”).

“Is not My word like a fire?” says the LORD, “And like a hammer that breaks the rock in pieces?”

“Therefore behold, I am against the prophets,” says the LORD, “who steal My words every one from his neighbour. ... who use their tongues and say, ‘He says.’ ... and cause My people to err by their lies and by their recklessness. Yet I did not send them or command them; therefore they shall not profit this people at all,” says the LORD. “So when these people or the prophet or the priest ask you, saying, ‘What is the oracle of the LORD?’ you shall then say to them, ‘What oracle?’ I will even forsake you,” says the LORD.” (Jer 23:29-33)

God says “Rebellion is the sin of witchcraft” (1 Sam 15:23), and “There shall not be found among you anyone who ... practices witchcraft...” (Deut 18:10). In Scripture, the word “witchcraft” is the same word as the word “divination” (qecem).

And one of the dictionary meanings of “divination” is “attempting to discover hidden knowledge by occult or supernatural means”.

Christians Looking to Jewish Leaders for Enlightenment

When Jesus spoke to his disciples and the multitudes, he warned them about the great failings of their religious leaders.

Known as “the eight woes” in Matthew 23, Jesus called the scribes and the Pharisees hypocrites and blind fools: they taught about God, but not the love of God; they converted people to a dead religion,

not based on Scripture but on their own traditions; they taught the law but did not practice the spirit of the law – justice, mercy and faithfulness; they presented themselves as being carnally pure, but they were full of greed and indulgence; they put on a mask of righteousness and beauty on the outside, when they were really dead men’s bones on the inside; they professed to have a high regard for the dead prophets of old, when in truth they were cut from the same cloth as those who persecuted and murdered them.

Not only that they would reject the very Son of God Himself and bring false witnesses against Him.

“The Son of man must suffer many things, and be rejected of the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be slain, and be raised the third day.” (Luke 9:22)

Although, it needs to be said, that many of the chief Jewish leaders, those of nobility and with power and great influence, did become believers during Jesus’s lifetime. “Nevertheless even among the rulers many believed in Him, but because of the Pharisees they did not confess Him, lest they should be put out of the synagogue” (John 12:42). And after Christ’s death and resurrection, we are told that “a great company of the priests became obedient to the faith” (Acts 6:7). Some of those who believed and became part of the church were from the sect of the Pharisees (Acts 15:4-6).

In Conclusion...

The Blue Letter Bible lexicon, under *Pharisees*, confirms that these religious leaders were a corrupted priesthood sect, having formed after the Jews had been taken into captivity to Babylonian.

“A sect that seems to have started after the Jewish exile. In addition to OT books the Pharisees recognised in oral tradition a standard of belief and life. They sought for distinction and praise by outward observance of external rites and by outward forms of piety, and such as ceremonial washings. They were bitter enemies of Jesus and his cause; and were in turn severely rebuked by him for their avarice, ambition, hollow reliance on outward works, and affection of piety in order to gain popularity, prayers, and alms giving; and, comparatively negligent of genuine piety, they prided themselves on their fancied good works, and affection of piety in order to gain popularity.”

And the big question is this: Why is it some of Christ’s followers today believe they will find more enlightenment outside of the Bible from the teachings of the very people Jesus criticised for not knowing the Scriptures and for hypocrisy and perjury. Furthermore, as the apostle Paul explained, the Old Testament cannot be understood by those who reject Christ.

“But their minds were blinded. For until this day the same veil remains unlifted in the reading of the Old Testament, because the veil is taken away in Christ. But even to this day, when Moses is read, a veil lies on their heart. Nevertheless when one turns to the Lord, the veil is taken away.”
(2 Cor 3:14-16)

“Then the scribes and Pharisees who were from Jerusalem came to Jesus, ... He answered and said to them, ‘Hypocrites! Well did Isaiah prophesy about you, saying: “These people draw near to Me with their mouth, And honour Me with their lips, But their heart is far from Me. And in vain they worship Me, Teaching as doctrines the commandments of men”’. ” (Matthew 15:1, 7-9)

“And Jesus answered and said to them: ‘Take heed that no one deceives you. ... For false christs and false prophets will rise and show great signs and wonders to deceive, if possible, even the elect.’”
(Matt 24:4, 24)

CHAPTER 11

Gap Creationism and the End Time

SYNOPSIS: A patchwork of pagan cosmogonies – Following the gap theory trail, from ancient to modern times and into the future – The Vatican, the UN, NASA and Rabbinical Judaism: a shared creation philosophy – Alleged UFO sightings and alien abduction cases skyrocketing – World leaders preparing to respond to anticipated contact – Future dilemma for old earth believers of all philosophical persuasions.

Reflecting on what I have learnt about the gap theory, as documented in the previous 10 chapters, it is a creation story that has all the hallmarks of a pagan cosmogony, incorporating a colossal intergalactic battle of the gods, which has been shaped by Chaldean/Babylonian and Jewish mystery religions and conjectured into the Bible.

This has only been made possible through the teachings of the Oral Law (as interpreted and recorded by Jewish occult scholars in the 2nd century AD). That is because these ideas are not explicitly found in the Written Word of God but rather cryptically “hinted at” and deciphered by “high priests”, that is, those who see themselves as imbued with a special understanding to go “deeper” than what is actually written in the Scriptures.

Later, these ideas have been adopted, embellished and incorporated into Christian theology by “progressive” scholars, such as Thomas Chalmers, Cyrus I Scofield and A. C. Custance, who saw a need for a creation story that could fit into the new sciences of geological and cosmological evolutionism and the belief in an ancient earth (another resurrected pagan concept) – and not done very well when examined! This is because it really messes with Scripture, by employing a literary system that isolates letters at the word level and rejects contrary Scriptural truths at the syntax level.

All this gap theory probing, deep mystery, double-mindedness, obfuscation and contradictions, which maintains the truth is hidden between the lines of Scripture, does not describe the God of the Bible, who tells us: “I have not spoken in secret, in a dark place of the earth ... *I have not spoken in secrets from the beginning.*” (Is 45:16: Is 48:16)

God – the Logos – chooses his words very carefully and clear passages must always govern unclear passages.

And the wonderful thing is this. We don’t have to be a Greek and Hebrew scholar, or a scientist, and we don’t have to rely on all manner of Bible study aids, or even have more than a basic level of education, in order to understand the Scriptures!

Because the key is to trust God and to desire to do his will, and to believe he is faithful and he has the will and the ability to preserve his truth for us today in his written word, even when Bibles are becoming more and more corrupted.

That is the great miracle of our Almighty God and the work of the Holy Spirit, which will guide us into all truth, if we are humble enough to listen (John 16:13)! (Although it would help for us to be aware of, and to stay away from, some of the more corrupted Bible versions being published today – in particular, *The Message* and *The Voice*.)

Why Do Proponents of Pagan Philosophies Despise Young Earth Creation?

I believe it is significant that proponents of pagan philosophies, ancient mystery religions and evolutionary sciences have two things in common. They have not only adopted the view of an ancient earth and reject the 24-hour six-day creation as recorded and believed by the ancient Hebrews, but most of their advocates also *utterly despise, scorn and ridicule the belief in a young earth as the most ignorant creation position of all!*

Thus closing a long dormant arc between ancient pagan philosophers (mystics) and modern axioms of the philosophers of naturalism (the mysterious origin sciences).

These old-age perspectives do not reveal a world that is becoming more enlightened about its beginnings, but a world that is becoming more and more deceived and moving *further away from God's truth and back to fables*, as the Bible predicted, evidenced in the following verses by the apostle Paul.

“For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine; but after their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears; And they shall turn away their ears from the truth, and shall be turned unto fables.” (2 Tim 4:3-4)

“Timothy! Guard what was committed to your trust, avoiding the profane and idle babblings and contradictions of what is falsely called knowledge... nor give heed to fables and endless genealogies, which cause disputes rather than godly edification which is in faith.” (1 Tim 6:20; 1 Tim 1:4)

“This testimony is true. Therefore rebuke them sharply, that they may be sound in the faith, not giving heed to Jewish fables and commandments of men who turn from the truth.” (Titus 1:13-14)

Gap Theory and the Future

Gap creationism has repercussion for the future, too, as it not only inserts a fictionalised chapter about Satan and his cosmic destruction into God's glorious creation event at the *beginning* of time, it will also serve to undermine the faith of believers at the *end time*.

This is because the great deception that is coming will provide “evidence” that will leave old-earthers of all persuasions less equipped to connect, or on hold on, to biblical truth.

This is already evident to those who are up-to-speed with the philosophical intent driving the theological, scientific and political establishments at the highest levels (as well as what is taking place philosophically at the grassroots level in our modern world). Think of the **Intelligent Design Movement** and all the origin sciences/philosophies, **NASA**, the **United Nations** and the **Roman Catholic Church**. Think also of how **New Age** philosophy (a combination of Eastern spirituality) has saturated every sector of our Western culture since its arrival in the 1960s.

The path drawing all these bodies together today is the search for spiritual (esoteric) answers to life from a 21st century worldview that has incorporated a belief in, search for, and considered response to, the existence of extra-terrestrial life in the universe. This perspective also plays a big part in the teachings of the **occult**, **theosophy** and **Kabbalah**. Here is an excerpt from an essay by **Rabbi Ariel Bar Tzadok**, ‘UFO's & Aliens in Light of Torah’.

“I most certainly am not the first Rabbi to reveal material concerning life on other planets. Other Kabbalistic Rabbis before me have written books revealing some of the best-kept secrets in the world.” (www.yeshshem.com/kabbalah-ufo-1.htm)

And the fact is, those who have accepted a different and uncertain history of the earth – stemming from occult mysteries and evolutionary ideas – will find themselves increasingly compromised and

less equipped to combat the ingenious deception that is already taking shape at the highest levels of government, religion and science, as evidenced in their public statements.

Extra-terrestrial Research Dollars in the Billions

Cultures can change dramatically. Back in the 1970s, anyone who believed that aliens existed on other planets was laughed to scorn. And if anyone had said they had been abducted by aliens, they would have been certified as insane and locked away.

Nevertheless, just 30 years later and NASA had been provided with an astronomical budget to search for signs of extra-terrestrial life in the universe.

Gary Bates (Creation Ministry International) explains the history of NASA's astrobiology program, and how the support this program receives today is the outcome of an aggressive campaign launched in the 1990s, which saw the Administration reinvent itself.

The new profile was a response to NASA becoming somewhat irrelevant in the eyes of the public at that time. (After all, the worldwide excitement of the moon landing was now more than 25 years before.) Bates explains that the man who "brought NASA back from the brink of a black hole" was NASA's administrator, **Daniel Goldin**. He achieved this by initiating the Origins Program, which focused on the search for signs of extra-terrestrial life. Daniel Goldin was described on NASA's website as a "brilliant visionary".

Goldin's Origins Program sought to "answer two enduring human questions that we once considered around ancient campfires, yet still keep alive in today's classrooms ... 'Where do we come from?' And 'Are we alone?'" (Refer to *Alien Intrusion: UFOs and the Evolution Connection*, DVD and book, Gary Bates, CMI.)

And this is no small program. NASA's astrobiology budget rose from US\$9 million in 1998 to a staggering US\$65 billion in 2005.

"Under NASA's 2007 budget proposal, currently before Congress, the U.S. space agency would spend \$32.5 billion on astrobiology in the year ahead – half of what it spent on astrobiology in 2005." (space.com/3031-nasa-budget-cuts-looming-seti-eyes-private-funding.html, 23 October 2006)

And this is the budget for just one such extra-terrestrial research organisation. Between them, NASA, the SETI Institute (Search for Extra-terrestrial Intelligence) and other such organisations employ thousands of highly qualified scientists, educators and support staff in their research.

In July 2014, NASA reported the following in an article titled 'Finding Life Beyond Earth's Reach':

"Many scientists believe we are not alone in the universe. It's probable, they say, that life could have arisen on at least some of the billions of planets thought to exist in our galaxy alone – just as it did here on planet Earth. This basic question about our place in the Universe is one that may be answered by scientific investigations. What are the next steps to finding life elsewhere?"

"Experts from NASA and its partner institutions addressed this question on July 14, at a public talk held at NASA Headquarters in Washington. They outlined NASA's roadmap to the search for life in the universe, an ongoing journey that involves a number of current and future telescopes." (<https://www.nasa.gov/content/finding-life-beyond-earth-is-within-reach>)

In the article, Dr **Matt Mountain**, director and Webb telescope scientist at the Space Telescope Science Institute in Baltimore, is quoted as saying.

“Just imagine the moment, when we find potential signatures of life. Imagine the moment when the world wakes up and the human race realizes that its long loneliness in time and space may be over -- the possibility we’re no longer alone in the universe.” (*ibid*)

Entertaining ideas of life beyond our planet is the natural philosophical outcome of long ages and evolutionism.

Alien Manifestations and Abductions

And it is not just scientists who are focusing on the possibility of extra-terrestrial life. Half of the American population believes in aliens, millions claim to have seen these ETs, and four million allege they have been abducted and taken on board alien spacecrafts. (Refer to the *Huffington Post*, ‘New Survey Shows Nearly Half of Americans Believe in Aliens’, August, 2017.)

According to a 2009 report on ABC Primetime (‘Abducted by Aliens: Believers Tell Their Stories’), a growing membership of a 1500-strong support group meet secretly in a small New England town. Their purpose? To cope with the trauma of alien visitations and abductions. The article reads:

“Many people have wondered: are earthlings living on a speck of dust – alone in the infinite universe or are there other intelligent life forms out there in the cosmos? Nearly half of all Americans and millions more globally believe we’re not alone, according to a 2000 ABC poll. While 40 million Americans say they have seen or know someone who has seen an unidentified flying object, or UFO, a growing number believe they’ve actually met aliens.” (Juju Chang, abcnews.go.com/Primetime/story?id=8330290, 17 Aug 2009)

For those people who believe God’s Word, it should be no surprise that the experiences of these “abductees” are similar in nature to metaphysical/transcendental forms of Eastern meditation, or of those who take hallucinogenic drugs. (For example, visitations, astral travel and visions, etc.) That is because they have the same origin – they are manifestations of the fallen spirit world, whose aim it is to deceive people in any way possible.

The devil’s lies will morph into any form or illusion that is culturally popular and significant, as it is more believable and acceptable to the individual.

For example, Celtic folklore popularised the belief in leprechauns, which was once widespread in Ireland. And according to a survey conducted by the Irish digital media company *Irish Central* in 2011, “One-third of Irish people believe that leprechauns exist”. Another example is that of Icelanders today, whose mystical geography and ancient sagas still capture the imagination of some locals so deeply, the existence of trolls is considered a reality. (Refer to 2013 article by Ryan Jacobs in *The Atlantic* magazine, ‘Why So Many Icelanders Still Believe in Invisible Elves’.) And in 19th century Britain there was a popular belief that fairies and sprites lived at the bottom of the garden.

The fact is, the belief in ghosts and ghouls and magical creatures (and reports of supernatural manifestations) have existed in all cultures in all eras. And in the 21st century, in the midst of phenomenal technological advancement, people are searching for spiritual meaning, answers and hope.

Thus our modern culture today is being spiritually conditioned for a global deception of unprecedented proportions (with the help of the worldwide web). Writes **Eva Wiseman** in *The Guardian*:

“Millennials who grew up on Harry Potter and The Craft are embracing witchcraft as an aspirational, inclusive lifestyle choice, complete with high street high priestess designs, and plenty of stars, and moons, and tiny little mirrors to reflect bad energy. Spellcasting is one step on from Facebook affirmations and quotes about positivity in typewriter font. Partly as a replacement for religion, partly,

perhaps, an extension of ‘wellness’, this new mysticism is related to mindfulness, to finding inner-peace, and feels like a reaction to powerlessness. (‘I Believe in Fairies, You Should, Too’, 12th November, 2017)

And with so much attention today directed at space travel – and space movies, games and books – alien mythology and experiences have entered our Western consciousness and culture big time, built on the philosophy of an ancient earth and evolutionary theory. It is even the hope of many people today that these extra-terrestrial life-forms may save the planet from destruction.

So What Does All This Have to Do with the Gap Theory?

All people who believe in an ancient earth, or a previous earth, or other creations, will struggle to overturn the “enlightened” teachings and “discoveries” that will move to centre stage when the well-documented ecumenical/interfaith/one-world religion and one-world government emerges, backed up by “scientific findings” (possible “relics” of “intergalactic” significance). This will be “supported” by spiritual manifestations that the Bible foretells will appear on a global scale (Matt 24:24-25).

Think of the many fraudulent and unsubstantiated “missing links” that have been “found” in an effort to support Darwinism (philosophically and for scientific funding) over the years. But also understand that a future discovery is sure to be coming, one which will prove far more convincing, as people are being primed for it! Today, the media and scientific establishments are certain alien life-forms will be discovered soon, or that they are already here. For example NASA astronaut **Ed Mitchell** says aliens are with us today.

And he’s not alone as a recent article in the UK’s *Independent* reported: “A NASA scientist says Earth may have already been visited by extra-terrestrials – but that humans may not have noticed” (December 4, 2018). Right now, a great deal of money is being injected into the scientific establishment to find out if life on earth was seeded by extra-terrestrial beings from another galaxy, far, far away.

The world’s acceptance of this idea has come a long way in a short time since outspoken atheist Francis Crick, co-discoverer of DNA, first floated his hypothesis of directed panspermia back in 1973. (Directed panspermia being the deliberate transport of microorganisms in space to be used as introduced species on lifeless but habitable astronomical objects.) Back then it was known as pseudo-science and Crick later discarded the idea.

This philosophising that the earth was populated by beings from outer space really is just a resurrection of ancient pagan Hindu, Greek and Roman creation myths. (Ancient Hindu texts describe aircraft called Vimana piloted by other-worldly beings. And the Ancient Greeks and Romans believed that a race of super-beings – gods – had visited the planet from outer space.)

Today, however, there is big money, a worldwide media movement and the latest technology being used to promote these philosophical musings.

“If life on Earth really did begin from the design of extra-terrestrial beings, then perhaps we might someday establish remote communication with them. The recent \$100 million Breakthrough Listen Initiative is one effort at addressing this question over the next decade.” (‘A Better Theory of Intelligent Design, Jacob Haqq-Misra, *The Boston Globe*, September 11, 2016.)

Another authoritative voice on the matter of UFOs and extra-terrestrial beings is Harvard **Professor David Kipping** of the Royal Astronomical Society. Only this philosopher is concerned that making contact with alien life-forms may not be in the earth’s best interest and that science should be developing some type of cloaking technology to hide the earth’s location.

“‘There is an ongoing debate as to whether we should advertise ourselves or hide from advanced civilizations potentially living on planets elsewhere in the Galaxy,’ said Kipping. ‘Our work offers humanity a choice, at least for transit events, and we should think about what we want to do.’”
(thescienceexplorer.com/universe/scientists-want-use-lasers-hide-alien-civilizations)

The World Will Focus on Outer Space

Below are quotes from three of the most influential bodies in the world today – the Vatican (spiritually), NASA (scientifically) and the UN (politically). These various bodies express our mainstream modern culture today.

“**The Vatican** Observatory and the Pontifical Academy of Sciences have just concluded a week-long gathering of scientists to examine the origin of life and the possibility of extra-terrestrial life. These questions offer many philosophical and theological implications,’ said Fr. Jose Funes, director of the Vatican Observatory.” (www.catholicnewsagency.com/news/vatican_observatory_examines_theological_implications_of_finding_alien_life.)

“‘I was heartened or at least surprised about a year ago when the chief scientist for **NASA**, **Ellen Stofan**, said, yes, we’ll find life within 20 years,’ said **Seth Shostak**, senior astronomer at the Search for Extra-terrestrial Intelligence Institute.” (www.nasa.gov/feature/langley/search-for-extraterrestrial-life-is-accelerating-astronomer-says)

“**The General Assembly [of the UN]** invites interested member states to take appropriate steps to coordinate on a national level scientific research and investigation into extra-terrestrial life, including unidentified flying objects, and to inform the secretary-general of the observations, research and evaluation of such activities.” (www.huffingtonpost.com.au/entry/wikileaks-ufos-united-nations_us_5813aa17e4b0390e69d0322e)

Introducing the concept of extra-terrestrial life arriving on this planet has begun at the smallest and most publicly acceptable level right now, but it is sure to escalate. It has to, because NASA needs both relevance and funding to survive as a prestigious and heavily funded organisation. And the concept of life existing in other parts of the galaxy is exciting and seductive to many people. NASA’s current drive is to protect the earth from any potential danger that may result from astronauts inadvertently carrying biological contaminants or pathogens back to our planet on their return from space travel.

At this point in time, the discussion is focusing on the microbiological plane in an effort to safeguard the earth’s biosphere from potentially harmful alien microbes. This has resulted in NASA hiring a Planetary Protection Officer. (Refer to *The Washington Post* article by **Andrew de Grandpre**, ‘NASA is Hiring a “Planetary Protection Officer” to Guard us Against Alien Life — and Vice Versa’, 2017.)

This focus has resulted in more and more emboldened scientists voicing their thoughts on panspermia – the theory that life on earth originated from microorganisms present in outer space that found our planet’s environment suitable to initiate the evolutionary process. In other words, what started as a small concept among a few people will soon be mainstream, as the world becomes more accepting of these philosophical ideas.

NASA is even working to bring the Christian community on board – with governmental backing.

“In 2014, NASA awarded US\$1.1M to the Center of Theological Inquiry, an ecumenical research institute in New Jersey, to study ‘the societal implications of astrobiology’. ... For example, when we ask, ‘What is life?’ are we asking a scientific question or a theological one? Questions about life’s origins and its future are complicated, and must be explored holistically, across disciplines. And that

includes the way we respond to the discovery of aliens.” (‘If We Made Contact with Aliens, How Would Religions React?’ Brandon Ambrosino, BBC, 16 December 2016).

Imagine what would happen if/when such “evidence” turns up, because this growing Satanic deception is not going nowhere!

The Threat of Artificial Intelligence and Deepfake on the Truth

Factor into all of this the advancements in artificial intelligence in the world of predictive text software, and few people will have the ability to discern what news is true and what is totally fabricated. In fact, the matter of fake news and deepfake is very topical now.

“The amount of deepfake content online is growing at a rapid rate. At the beginning of 2019 there were 7964 deepfake videos online, according to a report from startup Deeptext; just nine months later, that figure had jumped to 14,678. It has no doubt continued to balloon since then... It does not require much imagination to grasp the harm that could be done if entire populations can be shown fabricated videos that they believe are real.” (‘Deepfakes Are Going to Wreak Havoc on Society. We Are Not Prepared’, Rob Toews, *Forbes Billionaires*, May 25, 2020.)

Journalist **Nick Whigham**, from news.com, describes this destabilising scenario in a February, 2019, article titled, ‘This Technology Could “Absolutely Devastate” the Internet As We Know It’. He explains how this software program can mimic the style and tone of a writer with such accuracy it can realistically replicate news reports and video footage complete “with fake quotes and a perfectly convincing narrative”. Called the GPT-2, this form of AI is said to be open to abuse and misuse and represents “one of the major potential threats facing the future of humanity”.

“A group of scientists previously backed by Elon Musk have designed a predictive text machine that is so eerily good its creators are worried about releasing it to the world ... A couple of journalists from *The Guardian* were given the chance to take the technology for a spin and were suitably concerned by its power. ‘AI can write just like me. Brace for the robot apocalypse,’ reads the headline by journalist Hannah Jane Parkinson. The OpenAI computer was fed an article of hers and ‘wrote an extension of it that was a perfect act of journalistic ventriloquism’, she said.

“The [OpenAI] organisation said it was concerned such software could be used to generate misleading news articles, impersonate others online, automate abusive or fake content on social media and automate email scams. Elon Musk says he has left OpenAI.”

The fact is, if Christians do not know where to place their faith now and are not firmly rooted in the truth – from the first verse to the last verse of the Bible – it will become increasingly difficult for them to discern fact from fiction. And with the continuous advancement of AI, fake news and deepfake, a whole new dimension for deception has been opened up on a global scale.

Esoteric Beliefs at the Highest Levels in Our World

Returning to the subject of extra-terrestrials, it is also important to know that the existence of alien lifeforms is taught in Theosophy (another esoteric religious movement). The central belief of these “Masters of Occult Wisdom”, as they call themselves, is the reappearance of [a false] Messiah – “Lord Maitreya”.

This internationally anticipated World Teacher – also being hailed “a new Saviour of Humanity” – is said to arrive when “a large bright star appears in the sky”.

Here is a description of the Theosophical Society (refer Encyclopedia Britannica) and, once again, the connection between Eastern spirituality, Kabbalah and Gnosticism is confirmed.

“Another movement influenced in part by **Hinduism** is the **Theosophical Society**. Founded in New York City in 1875 by Helena Blavatsky of Russia, it was originally inspired by **Kabbalah** (Jewish esoteric mysticism), **Gnosticism** (esoteric salvatory knowledge), and forms of **Western occultism**.”

Theosophy is no joke – it is the very foundation the 1950s **New Age Movement** and it is operating abstrusely at the highest governmental levels throughout our worldly system under “the god of this world” (2 Cor 4:4). Theosophy actively works to undermine every single Christian doctrine. For example, the Bible tells us that sin separates man from God (Is 59:2; Mic 3:4, Eze 39:23). *Theosophy teaches that man is not a sinner and there is NO separation, because man IS god.*”

“We are all part of the whole and there is no separation in the Universe,” (<https://blavatskytheosophy.com/12-things-theosophy-teaches/>)

“‘Destroy the sense of separateness,’ repeats Krishna under every form.”
(www.blavatsky.net/newsletters/non-separateness.htm)

And I wonder how many people know about the New Age-based philosophical drive to bring about an interfaith one world religion.

In May 2012, for example, under the very respectable guise of World Health Day, more than 500 million people, representing all faiths, in seven continents and seven countries, were encouraged to link en mass to meditate for good health and world peace. On the surface, this sounds very noble.

Another such “noble” event was the signing of the ‘Document on Human Fraternity for World Peace and Living Together’ by **Pope Frances** and the **Grand Iman of Al-Azhar**. This ceremony took place in February 2019 during a Global Conference on the topic Abu Dhabi.

The Vatican News describes this historic Document as working to awaken spiritual awareness in the hearts of all people from all cultures and all faiths around the world. Its claimed purpose is to bring about world peace and eradicate terrorism and extremism and to “safeguard the creation and the entire universe”. This brotherhood of man project will operate under the terms of the Vatican.

In practice, however, this global movement to unify the world’s religions is in direct opposition to the God of the Bible, who tells us there is only one God and “I will not give my glory to another” (Is 42:8). And he commands his people not to unite with other faiths for any reason, as this admix of the holy and the profane is an abomination and results in deadly “strange fire” (Lev 10:1; Num 26:61).

The spiritual movement to bring about an ecumenical, interfaith, New Age form of a one-world religion is not a secret.

There is evidence of it everywhere, from those who promote and support it and those who warn about it and condemn it. The latter group points out the natural trajectory of combining government with religion/ideology – a dictatorship that would not tolerate dissenters. (We have many examples of this unholy alliance, both in history and present in the world today.)

Furthermore, the Bible warns of the “end time” when the world will join together in spiritual worship – not of the Creator God but of the Great Deceiver – “the god of this world”. And Jesus foretold that unless godly intervention occurs, the earth will be destroyed.

“For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be. And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved: but for the elect’s sake those days shall be shortened... Therefore you also be ready, for the Son of Man is coming at an hour you do not expect.” (Matt 24:21-22; 44)

Could God Have Created Aliens?

But, some might ask, “Couldn’t Jesus have died for Aliens, too?”. The Bible, however, makes it clear that the gospel of Jesus Christ is irrevocably incompatible with a belief in extra-terrestrials, prehistoric evolutionary man or any other imaginary form of life.

When King David gazed up at the stars, he marvelled at the work of God’s hands and how man (alone) was the crowning glory of God’s creation, saying:

“When I consider Your heavens, the work of Your fingers, The moon and the stars, which You have ordained, What is man that You are mindful of him, And the son of man that You visit him? For You have made him a little lower than the angels, And You have crowned him with glory and honor. You have made him to have dominion over the works of Your hands; You have put all things under his feet, All sheep and oxen – Even the beasts of the field, The birds of the air, And the fish of the sea That pass through the paths of the seas. O LORD, our Lord, How excellent is Your name in all the earth!” (Ps 8:3-9)

A straight-forward reading of the Bible tells us that “In the beginning, God created the heavens and the earth”. The earth’s land masses were formed on Day 3 and the heavenly bodies were formed **afterwards**, on Day 4. As for man, he was formed on Day 6, in the image of his Creator. “**God created man** in His own image.” At the beginning of creation, the **earth** gets a very special mention in the entire universe – and **man** is placed at the **focus** of God’s creation and plan. And whatever happens here on earth affects the whole creation.

Out of all the creatures God has made, seemingly insignificant man is the pinnacle of his creation. And, amazingly, our Creator has appointed humankind as vice regents over the earth at this time, putting all things under his feet, and exalting him and setting His heart on him (Ps 8:6; Job 7:17)). But such a plan came at a terrible cost to our Creator, who knew that by giving man freewill he would choose to sin and become corrupted, and He (our Maker) would have to sentence him to die. This is because God is a holy God who cannot dwell with evil. (Just imagine living an eternity with a capricious God who could lie and change his mind to accommodate evil.) Thus God decreed that sin equals death, separation from him for eternity.

But our Creator loves us so much he did not leave us without hope and a future. And so he came to earth in the human form to redeem man from the penalty of death by paying the price for sin Himself and offering man the choice to believe, repent and be saved.

“For You are not a God who takes pleasure in wickedness, Nor shall evil dwell with You” (Ps 5:4).

“For God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have everlasting life. For God did not send His Son into the world to condemn the world, but that the world through Him might be saved” (John 3:16-17)

“... knowing that you were not redeemed with corruptible things, *like* silver or gold, from your aimless conduct *received* by tradition from your fathers, but with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot. He indeed was foreordained before the foundation of the world...” (1 Pet 1:18-20)

“Repent therefore and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, so that times of refreshing may come from the presence of the Lord” (Acts 3:19).

But Could Jesus Have Died for Aliens, Too?

Scripture has the answer to this question. God tells us that Christ died once for all mankind (Rom 6:10, 1 Peter 3:18) on the earth. And Heb 9:25-28 confirms that Jesus was not destined to be sacrificed more than once in God’s created (singular) universe.

“Nor did he enter heaven to offer himself again and again, the way the high priest enters the Most Holy Place every year with blood that is not his own. Otherwise Christ would have had to suffer many times since the creation of the world. But he has appeared once for all at the culmination of the ages to do away with sin by the sacrifice of himself. Just as people are destined to die once, and after that to face judgment, so Christ was sacrificed once to take away the sins of many; and he will appear a second time, not to bear sin, but to bring salvation to those who are waiting for him.” (Heb 9:25-28)

And we know this is true because in Isaiah 40:8, God tells us: “The grass withers and the flowers fall, but the word of our God stands forever”.

As Gary Bates points out: Through his amazing grace, the Creator of the universe offers mankind alone the opportunity to participate in his awesome plan. God’s word tells us **that Jesus came to earth** – not the planet Neptune. **That he is a descendant of Adam**, not aliens.

And **Jesus came to pay the price for *man*’s sins** – not Martians, or even angels.

One thing is sure, as more and more scientists, politicians, religious leaders (even among Christians), and the general public are seduced by a philosophy that believes in aliens, those people who dare to disagree, and stand on the authority of the Bible, will be challenged and labelled as ignorant and primitive.

We Have Been Warned

God has not left his people without warning about the monumental deception that will strike wonder, fear, and false hope into the hearts of all mankind, just prior to Christ’s return, when great signs will appear in the heavens (Rev 13:13-14). And it is significant that the first instruction Jesus gave to his disciples, when warning them about what was going to happen at the end of the world, just prior to his return, was specifically to be on guard – *against all forms of deception*.

“Now as He sat on the Mount of Olives, the disciples came to Him privately, saying, ‘Tell us, when will these things be? And what will be the sign of Your coming, and of the end of the age?’ And Jesus answered and said to them: ‘Take heed that no one deceives you. For many will come in My name, saying, “I am the Christ,” and will deceive many. ...Then if anyone says to you, “Look, here is the Christ!” or “There!” do not believe it. For false christs and false prophets will rise and show great signs and wonders to deceive, if possible, even the elect. See, I have told you beforehand.’” (Matt 24:3-5, 23-25)

One thing is sure, those who believe and have faith in God’s 6-day CREATION story, as he has explained it clearly and not in riddles in Genesis 1, are less likely to be led astray when all this occurs, compared to those who are already compromised by having been led astray by pagan concepts of the history of the world. That is, those who hold to an esoteric history of an ancient earth, inhabited by fallen angels and an ensuing battle of “the gods”, which continues to morph and evolve in its bid to deceive all its inhabitants.

“The coming of the lawless one is according to the working of Satan, with all power, signs, and lying wonders, ... And for this reason God will send them strong delusion, that they should believe the lie” (2 Thess 2:9, 11) ... “People worshiped the dragon ... All inhabitants of the earth will worship the beast – all whose names have not been written in the Lamb’s book of life ...” (Rev 13:4, 8-9).

“When He prepared the heavens, I was there, When He drew a circle on the face of the deep, When He established the clouds above, When He strengthened the fountains of the deep...” (Pro 8:27-28)

CHAPTER 12

In the Beginning – a Young Earth Creation Narrative

SYNOPSIS: The events during creation week – Holding God’s Word as the ultimate authority – A beginning filled with delight and rejoicing, or a beginning filled with chaos and confusion? – God rested on the literal seventh day of created time, or God rested on a symbolic seventh day, after billions of years?

I have yet to see a simple event-line to support the gap theory. Gap creationists I have spoken with have either been disinterested or incapable of doing this. Others have point blank refused, because, they say, there isn’t one. But a doctrine about historical events must have some kind of lineal event sequence, even if we don’t know years or times, in order to comprehend it. Also, for anything to have credibility it must follow basic lines of logic.

In fact, I challenge any gap creationist to piece together their old-earth narrative *by joining the biblical dots supported by Scripture*, in the same broad-brush picture view as I have done here with my young earth creation narrative.

Once a gap creationist tries to do this, they will find their narrative can only be compiled from outside sources and a handful of Scriptures taken out of context!

According to gap creationists, God created the heavens and the earth in Gen 1:1, but we are not told *when or how or what exactly happened*. And by verse 2 the earth had already sunk into a chaotic, confused and wasted state. This is all on account of a controversial reading of five words in Gen 1 (refer to Chapter 8, ‘Six Biblical Conundrums of the Gap Theory’).

The only reason for wanting to re-interpret these words and verses is because **a)** secular science says the earth is billions of years old – so the Bible has to fit this evolutionist timeframe of the earth somehow; and **b)** ancient cabbalistic rabbinical Judaism teaches that the Oral Law reveals there are layers of hidden meanings in the creation account that provide a different history to that of the plain reading of the Hebrew Bible (refer Chapter 10, ‘The Gap Principle and Kabbalah Connection’).

But if such a person were to read Genesis 1 as a continuous flowing narrative, which is what all world-leading Hebraists agree the Author intended (refer Chapter 6), they would start to see it differently. We will never be able to understand the literal six-day creation narrative fully in this lifetime, but it is what God has told us he did and he has confirmed this in other Scriptures (Ex 20:11; Gen 2:2-4). A person just needs to let go of their unbelief as well as their trust in man (eg. Bible commenters, ministers, rabbis and scientists) and have faith in what God actually says. Only then will all the pieces come together and make perfect sense:

“Through faith we understand that the worlds were framed by the word of God, so that things which are seen were not made of things which do appear” (Heb 11:3).

There is no other explanation on earth that makes more sense – historically and biblically, and philosophically and spiritually. Think about it! There is **NO natural** explanation that has been, or ever will be, able to explain **HOW** the creation came into existence. It cannot be explained by natural philosophies, because it was a **supernatural** event and no human being was present to witness it.

All other explanations require us to exchange the biblical mysteries God has included in the Bible for unbiblical mysteries devised by man. One famous atheist who came to realise this was Professor Antony Flew (1923-2010).

A Renowned Atheist Renounces His “Faith” in No God

Sir Antony Flew was formerly Professor of Philosophy at the University of Keele, England. He also held positions at the Universities of Aberdeen, Reading and Oxford. Flew has been described as “the world’s most notorious atheist”. He set the agenda for modern evolutionary atheism for half a century and wrote more than 30 books promoting this belief.

Described as a “stellar philosopher”, Flew eventually changed his mind and concluded that there had to be a God. His book, aptly titled *There Is No A God*, was published in 2008.

So what was it that turned Flew around? Here was a man who believed in “following the evidence wherever it takes you” (as he explained in his book, quoted below). But rather than see Darwin’s blueprint of randomness being responsible for what looked like “apparent” design in the natural world, Flew was won over by the new evidence of design mandated by the existence of DNA, and related biological machinery, coming out of discoveries in micro and molecular biology. Flew stressed that the main reason for “believing in a First Cause God is the impossibility of providing a naturalistic [Darwinian] explanation of the origin of the first living reproducing organisms”. He wrote about his conversion –from Darwinism to intelligent design – and how difficult it was for him to overturn his lifelong evolutionary presupposition.

“... how easy it is to let preconceived theories shape the way we view the evidence instead of letting the evidence shape our theories ... I have followed the argument where it has led me. And it has led me to accept the existence of a self-existent, immutable, immaterial, omnipotent, and omniscient Being.” (A. Flew, *There Is No A God*, p87)

Although Flew did not believe in the God of the Bible before he died (he was a deist), when confronted with the reality of the indescribable complexity of the so-called “simple cell” he concluded that there was no evidence for Darwinian processes in its formation. Intelligence must have been involved in life’s origin. The big question he was unable to answer before he died, however, was the identity of the God (Intelligence) behind the creation of the universe and all life.

A stumbling block for many people is the question: Who created God?

Who Created God?

The answer? Everything that has a beginning has a cause (a reason for its existence). And as the universe had a beginning, it must therefore have a cause. The Creator of the universe, however, did not have a beginning. God is absolute, eternal, first cause, pure actuality, an omniscient, omnipotent, and perfect being. Though related to the world as its cause, he is not affected by the world. He is essentially transcendent over the world; and the world exists relative to him as a temporal effect of his action. (Refer *Encyclopaedia Britannica*).

This describes traditional, biblical Christianity, so why do certain people have a problem believing this?

Interestingly, man can somewhat envision eternity in a future context – ie. a form of continued existence that is not subject to the dimension of space-time that governs the physical domain. But the limited human mind finds it exceedingly difficult (impossible, in fact) to image eternity extending into the past. It is the concept of infinity that our finite brains grapple with. That is where faith comes in – and we all exercise this whatever we believe about the past and the creation.

But it is not good enough to just have faith – because the object of our faith must be based on truth.

For example, a person can place an enormous amount of faith in an amulet, lucky charm or talisman (such as a rabbit's foot, horseshoe, four leaf clover, piece of jewellery, etc), but if there is no truth behind that belief it is powerless.

Conversely, a person can have faith “as small as a mustard seed” in the one true God and mighty miracles will take place in their lives. For example, when the disciples came to Jesus unable to understand why they could not cast out demons in people:

“Jesus said to them, ‘Because of your unbelief; for assuredly, I say to you, if you have faith as a mustard seed, you will say to this mountain, “Move from here to there,” and it will move; and nothing will be impossible for you’.” (Matt 17:20; Mark 11:22-23)

To “move mountains” in this context means “to accomplish most difficult, stupendous and incredible things” (Matt 21:21; Matt 17:20; 1 Cor 13:2). This is the reality for a true believer in Christ – to experience the Creator's miracles in their heart, mind and life.

“And do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind, that you may prove what is that good and acceptable and perfect will of God.” (Rom 12:2)

“I will give you a new heart and put a new spirit within you; I will take the heart of stone out of your flesh and give you a heart of flesh.” (Eze 36:26)

Returning to the matter of the gap theory, if we change the Genesis six-day creation account to a “re-creation” account, because we don't know when or how the “initial earth” was created, we are just pushing the problem back – to another creation – because we don't know how and when *that* version of the earth was created, either.

(And thus we find ourselves in the company of evolutionary science once again, with its claim of multi-verses.)

In The Beginning... of the Creation

God has not given us a detailed account of how he created. (How can the making of a miracle be explained to our finite minds in any language?) And the original creation, before sin and the curse entered the world, would have looked very different to the earth today. But with our limited human understanding let us revisit Genesis 1 from the 6000-year-old-earth perspective.

However, let us do so from Proverbs 8, which confirms the creation account in Genesis 1.

Proverbs 8 tells us the historical background of how Wisdom was with God when he “established, stabilised and secured” the “invisible universe”, then set a “circuit” upon the “primeval ocean, abyss” (*kuwn; shamayim; chuwg; tēhowm*). This was when Wisdom saw the beginning of “the sons of men”. And the description is the same God communicated in Job 26, 38-41, during which time “the sons of God sang for joy” – *thus connecting the sons of men to the sons of God [angels] in the same creation narrative.*

“When he prepared (established and secured) the heavens (invisible universe), I [wisdom] was there: when he set a compass (circuit) upon the face of the depth (primeval ocean): When he established the clouds above: when he strengthened the fountains of the deep: When he gave to the sea his decree, that the waters should not pass his commandment: when he appointed the foundations of the earth: When I was by him, as one brought up with him: and I was daily his delight, rejoicing always before

him; Rejoicing in the habitable part of his earth; and my delights were with the sons of men.”
(Pro 8:27-31)

And I would be interested to know how it is possible for the wisdom of God to have been rejoicing daily and full of delight while hovering over a chaotic mess of a planet so obliterated it had been reduced to a formless body of water with no firmament?

Not only that but Satan, who is said to have been living on this decimated planet was, apparently, still ruling over this mess and the ensuing re-creation process, as he was the rightful ruler of the earth – which hardly seems something for Wisdom to have been revelling in and celebrating.

The First Day of Creation

Back to Gen 1:1-5 – which constitutes the **first day** – we can try to imagine how this miracle might have happened. This is because God deals with the real world (reality), therefore it must be possible to construct a likely sequence of events, taking into account some known simple science. (Science simply means “knowledge”).

Gen 1:1 tells us Who did What, When – “In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth”.

The universe began when God created an empty space, devoid of features, which declared the boundaries of the physical domain. “The Lord God... measured heaven with a span” (Is 40:12). “The pillars of heaven tremble and are astonished at his reproof” (Job 26:11). “He stretches out the north over empty space; He hangs the earth on nothing” (Job 26:7). Once again God confirms that he created the earth before anything else.

The heavens had no astronomical bodies as yet and were waiting to be filled. As for the earth, it began its existence as a mass of water/fog, devoid of any defined shape or features. “The Lord God... has measured the waters in the hollow of his hand” (Is 40:12). God’s Spirit hovered tenderly (brooded) over this deep (Gen 1:2). Then he commanded a supernatural light to illuminate this body (perhaps similar to that which will illuminate the new earth, Rev 22:5).

God tells us “He gathers the waters of the sea together as a heap; He lays up the deep in storehouses” (Ps 33:7). “He determined its measurements... and stretched the line upon it” and “fastened its foundations” (Job 38:5-6). “He drew a circular horizon on the face of the waters, at the boundary of lightness and darkness” (Job 26:8,10). Having fashioned the water into a sphere, he set it rotating. “He set a compass [circular journey] on the face of the deep” (Pro 8:27).

We know all this happened on the first day, because the illuminating light source and rotating watery globe divided the light from the darkness, evenly and instantly, and brought the first 24-hour day-and-night cycle into being. This was the very first day when the earth was a rotating sphere of fog/water being the nascent universe described by God here as “earth”, and time began to be measured in the physical realm, as one revolution from evening to evening.

The Second and Third Days of Creation

On the **second day**, God made the firmament by separating the waters on the globe to create the sky, cloud formations and the earth’s atmosphere. “He divided the sea with his power” (Job 26:12). “God said, ‘Let there be a firmament in the midst of the waters, and let it divide the waters from the waters’... and God divided the waters which were under the firmament from the waters which were above [together with] the firmament. And God called the firmament heaven” (Gen 1:6-7). “He binds up the waters in his thick clouds, yet the clouds are not broken under it...” (Job 26:8) “I made the clouds [the sea’s] garment” (Job 38:9).

This watery division may also explain the abundance of water, in one form or another, which is found everywhere in the solar system, often as ice.

(It is in comets, planetary rings, on moons, formerly on Venus, on the polar caps of Mars and possibly on asteroids.) Now the fog was condensed into liquid water and also absorbed by the newly created atmosphere, measured today as the relative humidity of the air.

The Third Day of Creation

On **day three**, he commanded landmasses to appear. “And God said, Let the waters under the heaven be gathered together unto one place, and let the dry land appear: and it was so. And God called the dry land Earth; and the gathering together of the waters called Seas” (Gen 1:9-10).

“The earth standing out of the water and in the water” (2 Pet 3:5). This caused the rapid formation of vast oceans, gushing rivers, creeks, lakes and cascading waterfalls all over the planet. He “calculated the dust of the earth in a measure. Weighed the mountains in scales and the hills in a balance” (Is 40:12). Following this by his word he commanded lush grasses, plants in full flower, mature herbs and fruiting trees to cover the earth. “Then God said, ‘Let the earth bring forth grass, the herb that yields seed, and the fruit tree that yields fruit according to its kind, whose seed is in itself, on the earth’; and it was so... For He spoke, and it was done; He commanded, and it stood fast” (Gen 1:11; Ps 33:9).

The Fourth Day of Creation

God’s account of creation reveals that the earth was made habitable before the universe was expanded and filled with heavenly bodies, by the breath of God’s mouth. “By the word of the LORD the heavens were made, And all the host of them by the breath of His mouth” (Ps 33:6). Not surprisingly, this is contrary to the philosophy of modern secular origin science (which is modelled on the concept of the big bang and evolutionism).

On the **fourth day**, God describes stretching out the heavens as a “tent” or “curtain” (Is 40:22).

He formed the universe by stretching it out in all directions. And what exactly did God stretch out? We know it today as “spacetime” – described in a mathematical model that fuses the three dimensions of space and the one dimension of time into a single four-dimensional continuum, although we don’t know all what it consists of.

“Until about thirty years ago, astronomers thought that the universe was composed almost entirely of this ‘baryonic matter’, ordinary atoms. However, in the past few decades, there has been ever more evidence accumulating that suggests there is something in the universe that we cannot see, perhaps some new form of matter” (NASA).

The Bible says this entity can be removed, burnt up, torn, shaken, split apart and rolled up like a scroll.

Albert Einstein described it as a smooth non-material fabric that is distorted by the presence of gravity and energy fields of various strengths. (In some way, this heavenly fabric can be opened to reveal another dimension; Acts 7:56).

God tells us that he “adorned the heavens” with gravitational bound galaxies and a host of astronomical bodies and forces (Job 26:13).

This included the Milky Way that contains our solar system. These heavenly objects – the sun, moon, planets and stars – were to be signs for us on earth and to provide multiple light sources to measure days, seasons and years.

“Then God said, ‘Let there be lights in the firmament of the heavens to divide the day from the night; and let them be for signs and seasons, and for days and years; and let them be for lights in the firmament of the heavens to give light on the earth’; and it was so” (Gen 1:14-15). The sun would rule the day and the moon would rule the night “to divide the light from the darkness” (Gen 1:18). Everything was fully operational, including the paths of light emanating from all the illuminating astronomical bodies (Job 38:18-24). And God said it was good.

The initial temporary supernatural light source was no longer required and would have been removed. The first phase of God’s creation was complete – making a suitable habitat on earth, with flora and heavenly bodies to mark time and seasons. Now the environment was ready for phase two – creating biological life. At this point, the Lord may have become an active agent by entering into his creation. This seems to be indicated by the fact that he walked upon the face of the earth and formed man out of the dust of the ground (Gen 2:7).

The Fifth and Sixth Days of Creation

Day Five, God filled the waters with living creatures and the sky with birdlife.

“Then God said, ‘Let the waters abound with an abundance of living creatures, and let birds fly above the earth across the face of the firmament of the heavens.’ So God created great sea creatures and every living thing that moves, with which the waters abounded, according to their kind, and every winged bird according to its kind. And God saw that it was good.” (Gen 1:20-21)

When the sixth day dawned, the Lord brought forth every creature on the land – all beasts and insects abounded.

Last of all would be the crowning glory of His creation – man and woman would be made (*asah*) in the very image of their Maker. Then He instructed them to multiply and fill the earth.

“Then God said, ‘Let the earth bring forth the living creature according to its kind: cattle and creeping thing and beast of the earth, each according to its kind’; and it was so. ... Then God said, ‘Let Us make man in Our image, according to Our likeness; let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, over the birds of the air, and over the cattle, over all the earth and over every creeping thing that creeps on the earth’.” (Gen 1:24:24, 26)

At the end of the Sixth Day, God finished the entire physical process and declared it “exceedingly good”.

Until this act of creation, completed within one week as described in Gen 1 and Gen 2, NO plant or herb had ever existed on the earth before, as it was dependant (in part) on the creation of man!

“This is the history of the heavens and the earth when they were created, in the day that the LORD God made the earth and the heavens, *before any plant of the field was in the earth and before any herb of the field had grown*. For the LORD God had not caused it to rain on the earth, and there was no man to till the ground;” (Gen 2:4-5)

There was nothing left now for God to do – on earth or in heaven – so He rested and set a day aside for man to commemorate His unique act of the six-day creation period!

“Remember the Sabbath day, to keep it holy. ... *For in six days the LORD made the heavens and the earth, the sea, and all that is in them*, and rested the seventh day. Therefore the LORD blessed the Sabbath day and hallowed it.” (Ex 20:8-11)

Nothing could be simpler to understand. Nevertheless, some people, who claim the Bible is their authority, refuse to believe it!

And God Rested... After Billions of Years

Now let us take an honest look at the gap theory, by peeling back the esoteric layers and exposing it for what it is *really* saying. Below I present this alternative version of Scripture – without the equivocations (doubletalk) gap creationism relies on and hides behind. (Refer Chapter 1):

“For in six days the LORD **re-made** heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested the seventh day of the **renovation**: wherefore the LORD blessed the sabbath day, and hallowed it... Thus the heavens and the earth, and all the host of them, were **set in order**. And on the seventh day God of the **re-creation** ended His work which He had done, and He rested on **this** seventh day from all His work which He had done. Then God blessed **this particular** seventh day and sanctified it, because in it He rested from all His work which He **had made over billions of years**.” (Gap theory version of Ex 20:11; Gen 2:1-3.)

And I cannot help but think how ingenious, crafty and subtle the Destroyer is – to introduce an indeterminate period of time before the first day of creation *based on nothing*. After all, the beauty of nothingness is that all evidence is circumstantial and you can’t disprove it (a bit like the belief in aliens, leprechauns, fairies and trolls).

Furthermore, by introducing this extra time period at the *beginning of creation*, the devil has successfully separated the Sabbath day from its biblical significance – that of being the FIRST EVER Seventh Day in history of the *creation*, mentioned 10 times in Genesis alone, and as the day God rested after his six-days of labour!

*“The earth was without form, and void; and darkness was on the face of the deep.
And the Spirit of God was hovering over the face of the waters. Then God said, ‘Let there be light’;
and there was light.” (Gen 1:2-3)*

“Timothy! Guard what was committed to your trust, avoiding the profane and idle babblings and contradictions of what is falsely called knowledge... nor give heed to fables and endless genealogies, which cause disputes rather than godly edification which is in faith.”
(1 Tim 6:20; 1 Tim 1:4)

Conclusions

I find it profound that the Creator of heaven and earth did not make one mention of the devil in His glorious creation account. Nevertheless, the gap theory has replaced this absence of information about the Destroyer with an imaginary unspecified period of time, then filled this void with stories that are meant to reveal the devil’s claimed God-like powers, God-given authority and monumental potential.

Satan has always had an inflated sense of his own importance and would be thrilled with any doctrine/theology that elevates his standing higher than it has ever been, or indeed ever could be, and which embellishes all his schemes as achievements, but which in fact never happened. That is, that God had originally wanted Lucifer to sit on the throne over all the earth (with the potential to be the ruler of the universe, in some versions of the gap theory), but he destroyed all of God’s beautiful creation. Furthermore, gap creation has the devil pronounce war in heaven and take his mighty forces to battle against the Almighty more than once.

When I began my exploration into the gap theory (in 2014), I had not expected to end up where I am today. I knew it was a sketchy creation narrative that didn’t match what I was reading in the Bible and spent most of my time chipping away at the leaves and twigs of this teaching. (For example, the alternative meanings of *hayah*, *bara*, *tohuw*, *bohuw*, *asah*, and the handful of random verses from the Bibles said to support this interpretation of Scripture.)

The old-earth science aspect was easy for me, because I had already investigated many of the same arguments when I examined the biblical account of creation against the claims of theistic evolutionary theology from 2009 to 2013.

I know that many gap creationists are not dogmatic and belligerent, nor are they given to ridiculing young earth creationists. (I have some very dear friends who believe in the gap theory.) In fact, many Christians have accepted this teaching without ever having really thought about it, so it does not play a big part in their understanding of God and thus they have managed to avoid much of its theological fall-out. And as it is not a salvation issue, many cast it off as unimportant what one believes about the age of the earth.

But if a person thinks this matter through to its theological conclusions (whether it be theistic evolution, gap creation, the gap principle or progressive creation), they will realise that all old earth teachings alter our perception of the character of God, the amount of power and authority attributed to the devil, and the nature of evil. It will have serious repercussions on a person’s faith in the future, too. (Refer to Chapter 11, ‘Gap Creationism and the End Time’.)

That is because the gap theory (and every old earth creation narrative) is a doctrine that claims evil, suffering and death were already present on the earth *before* the original sin of the first man! (Refer to Chapter 2, ‘Origin of the Devil.’)

This, however, is in conflict with the Bible’s creation account, which consistently connects the sin of the first man, Adam – which brought the curse of death into an otherwise exceedingly good creation – directly to the last Adam, Christ, who became our Redeemer on the Cross (Gen 3:14; 1 Cor 15:45; Rom 5:12; Rom 8:22).

Gap creation (and all old-earth theories) also alters our view of Scripture, by insisting that God's Word is not enough by itself but requires special interpretation by esteemed scholars to decipher its "hidden messages", which "reveal" Genesis should not be taken literally.

Putting it All Together

When I began to work through the gap theory, so that I could understand its theological implications and find its historical roots, and I discovered that the trunk of the gap theory tree is an occult doctrine of **Babylonian Mystery Religion** origins, even I was a bit surprised (although not entirely). What had at first appeared to be a strange and murky teaching had now turned into something quite sinister.

And no wonder, because when gap theology is sifted through we find that Satan has now taken on a major role in both the creation account and the gospel message. Also, his capabilities are said to be so great that he can even destroy the earth and rally his formidable forces to do battle against God's angels, bringing a level of destruction into God's heavenly realm, too. (Refer to Chapter 10, 'The Gap Principle and Kabbalah Connection', and Chapter 4, 'Devil Cast to Earth'.)

Furthermore, it is a teaching that elevates the devil's powers and authority on one hand while serving to diminish those of Jesus Christ's, our Creator and Redeemer, on the other hand. Even though some members build on this doctrine more than others, the trunk of the tree and its fruit are the same. (Refer to Chapter 3, 'The Devil in the Garden'.)

Not all gap creationists believe the numerous aspects I have detailed in my exploration, but these are the logical outcomes of this doctrine when it is followed through to its natural conclusions, as is evident in this study. It is not my intention here to criticise gap creationists personally but to encourage them to seriously examine the creation account they have adopted.

Young Earth vs an Old Earth

Young earth creation and the gap theory can't both be true – one is from God and the other one is not. Below I state some of the differences, which affect major doctrines of the Christian faith:

EVIL AND SIN

Each creation narrative has a different view of God's goodness, the development of evil and the effects of sin.

Young earth creation sees the suffering, decay and death of all life in the animal kingdom (not just man) as a direct consequence of Adam's sin and the curse. And all the fossils and rock layers on the planet today are attributed to the catastrophic global flood in Noah's day, a judgment that is clearly documented in Scripture and not any imaginary event prior to the creation of man (Gen 6:12-13; Matt 24:37-39).

The gap theory, on the other hand, sees suffering and death in the animal kingdom as the natural biological system of God's choice. This is because it has accepted the explanation of the (evolutionary) scientific establishment that the fossil record reaches back 3.8 billion years (i.e. before man was created). If this gap theory view is to be consistent, it will (and does) spill over into the "re-creation", with the belief that death in the animal kingdom is natural, and that God's curse was only directed to man (and the planet). For any gap creationist who doesn't go along with this view, how would they explain adversity, calamity and the biological death of animals on the earth *before* Adam sinned? (Refer to Chapter 5, 'How Did Evil Develop?')

In gap creation, the fossils (which bear evidence of disease and suffering) and the geological strata of the earth are said to explain the destruction on the "previous earth". As for Noah's flood, it must, then, have only been local or tranquil. (After all, any global breaking up of the great deep and catastrophic

worldwide flooding over the face of the earth, which lasted several months during the days of Noah, would have ripped up all the rock layers and destroyed any fossils.)

THE BIBLE

Each creation story also has a different understanding of Scripture.

Young earth creation views the words in the Bible as sufficient. It does not turn to outside sources that claim to decipher hidden meanings. Nor does it introduce new terms, apply double-mindedness, or require the Hebrew manuscripts to be changed or added to in an effort to align its creation account with old-earth naturalistic philosophy, or the ideas and traditions held by modern Bible commenters or ancient Jewish mystics. Rather, young earth creation believes, by faith, that the Genesis scribe (Moses) penned the creation account as a continuous, single-minded narrative that means what it says and says what it means.

The gap theory, on the other hand, cannot exist on Scripture alone (*Sola Scriptura*). Rather, it *relies totally* on the opinions of others – that is, modern Bible commentaries, eg. C. I. Scofield’s Reference Bible, and second century Jewish sages, eg. A. C. Cushman’s numerous cabalistic sources. (Refer to Chapter 9, ‘History of the Gap Theory’.) Furthermore, the gap theory **is an equivocal (double-minded) doctrine that says one thing and means something quite different.** One proof of this is that in the gap theory, the “creation” has to cryptically divide into an “initial creation” and a “re-creation”, which are almost always referred to as the “creation”, leaving the reader in the dark by not drawing a clear distinction between the two. (Refer to Chapter 1, ‘The Gap Theory’s Distortion of Language’.)

CREATION

Each creation story has different explanations about the creation itself.

Young earth creation views this earth as having been made in a perfect state of beauty with God as its sole authority and no presence of evil until sometime after the first literal seventh day of created time – the very first Sabbath, when God declared his CREATION exceedingly good and rested from all his labours (**Gen 2:2**). It also acknowledges that God has *always* held the title of *Lord of both heaven and earth*. (Refer to Chapter 3, ‘The Devil in the Garden’.)

“For the kingdom is the LORD’s, And He rules over the nations.” (Ps 22:28)

“The LORD reigns; Let the earth rejoice; Let the multitude of isles be glad!” (Ps 97:1)

“God, who made the world and everything in it, since He is Lord of heaven and earth, does not dwell in temples made with hands.” (Acts 17:24)

The devil’s power, on the other hand, is limited to this present evil age as “*the god of this world*” (2 Cor 4:4) and “the prince of the power of the air” (Eph 2:2). That is, through a deceptive and evil system of communications.

The gap theory sees this “current earth”, the entire creation at this time in fact, as having begun in a state of chaos, confusion and horror, having suffered apocalyptic devastation at the hands of the devil as a result of his rebellion (or maybe at the hands of God, as there is no agreement on this). Why the Creator God allowed Satan to wreak such havoc, we are not told. (Or why God would do it himself is a mystery.) Now God had no other option than to set about remaking his once- beautiful creation. Not only that but He had to conduct His work under the spiritual darkness of Satan, who was still the rightful ruler of the planet (having not yet been disposed) and thus already present in Eden.

THE GOSPEL MESSAGE

These two creation narratives also have different emphases/versions of the gospel message.

Young earth creation focuses on Christ having come to the earth to redeem mankind from the bondage of sin and the curse of death through his sacrificial death on the Cross and his resurrection to life. Those who believe, repent, are baptised and follow his commandments (Mark 1:15; Acts 2:38; John 14:15) are given a new Spirit and become a new creation (2 Cor 5:17). They are no longer subject to the god of this world. Their allegiance is now to a new King, Jesus Christ the Righteous, who was sinless and obedient to the Cross and victorious over death. Christ has provided the way for all mankind to be released from the bondage of the devil and to become citizens of this new kingdom (1 Tim 2:3-6; 2 Pet 3:9).

This kingdom began as small as a mustard seed – at the beginning of the first-century fellowship of believers (the church) on the Day of Pentecost, 50 days after Christ had fulfilled his mission on earth. And it will eventually become a reality for all the inhabitants of the earth at Christ's return (Matt 24:31-32). This will make the devil's office, as the prince and power of the air, obsolete, and he will be removed permanently (Rev 20:1-3, 10). Christ will then sit on the righteous throne of David (Luke 1:32).

In **gap creation** (the version I am familiar with) the message that Christ came to die for our sins is clear, but there is also another emphasis; one that is unbiblical. It is the teaching that Christ had to come to earth to qualify as a human (the perfect Last Adam) so that He could replace the devil (who usurped the fallen First Adam) on his throne over the planet. It also sees, as important to the gospel message, the need to understand how highly God valued Lucifer (before he became Satan) for billions of years, and to know about all his powerful exploits and unrestrained authority over two earths.

In this creation narrative, it is claimed that the devil has been the ruler over two earths: in the "initial creation" and in the "re-creation".

This is because the kingdom of God is said to have not happened yet, nor can it while the devil rules the planet. But when Christ returns, He will replace the devil on his throne over the earth and usher in the kingdom of God. (Refer to Chapter 3, 'The Devil in the Garden'.)

I acknowledge there would be other versions of the gap theory that would not agree with all these points. Either way, it is a doctrine that attributes great power and unrestrained authority to the devil and teaches how highly God valued Lucifer/Satan in His plan for billions of years.

THE SABBATH DAY

Young earth creation and the gap theory have different understandings of the significance of the seventh-day Sabbath.

Young earth creation sees the Sabbath connected to God's act of *creation*, believing it to be THE LITERAL first-ever seventh day of created time, when God rested from ALL his labours after the six-day creation (Ex 20:11). (Refer to Chapter 12, 'In the Beginning – A Young Earth Creation Narrative'.)

Gap creation does not connect the Sabbath to the creation, but only as far back as the Law of Moses. One gap-theory believing, Sabbath-keeping pastor we spoke to said the Sabbath was a day of worship but he couldn't explain why. And it is hardly surprising, because in gap creation the Sabbath is thought to be A SYMBOLIC seventh day, as billions of other seventh days are said to have preceded it. Thus it has a different explanation for the Sabbath than that of Moses and Jesus (Ex 20:11; Mark 10:6). Interestingly, I have never yet heard a gap creationist connect the Sabbath to God resting after

the six-day “Renovation”. Presumably this is because such a claim clashes with Scripture so blatantly, which everyone – even gap creationists themselves – would feel intensely uncomfortable with!

SATAN’S AUTHORITY

Young earth creation and the gap theory view the devil’s character and authority differently.

Young earth creation exposes the devil as a liar, murderer and coward from the beginning of creation, not having the capability to do anything outside of God’s supreme jurisdiction. This creation narrative puts Satan totally under God’s control in every way. From this theological position, Lucifer was never given rulership over God’s creation, only over the airwaves and systems of the world after the first man sinned, thus transferring his allegiance to the devil (Eph 2:2). Nor did the devil have the power to destroy the earth and (as some claim) even the universe (Job 1:9-12).

Furthermore, Satan had no power to *actually* ascend into the heavenly realm to attack God Almighty, rather it was all bravado – in his *heart and mind* (Is 14:12-15). In truth, it was God himself who initiated the final separation, by giving the decree that banned the devil (and his angels) from ever again visiting/returning to the heavenly realm to appear before His throne. These visitations had been commanded by God for a limited period of time only – that is, after the devil was cursed in the Garden of Eden and no longer held the position as God’s covering cherub (Eze 28:14; Gen 3:14; Job 1:6-7).

This decree, to end the devil’s visitation rights to the heavenly realm, and thus to cast him down to the earth, never to return again, was given around the time Jesus fulfilled his ministry, just prior to His crucifixion and ascension to glory to sit at the right hand of God the Father as our Advocate. Now there was no place found in heaven for “the accuser of the brethren” any more (Rev 12:10). (John 12:21; Phil 2:8-11; Acts 7:55-56; Rom 8:34; Eph 1:20). (Refer to Chapter 4, ‘When Was the Devil Cast Down to the Earth?’)

And all of this was done in God’s timing and at His command. And so Satan, in his great wrath, turned his attention to destroying the church (Christians on earth), where he still maintains a level of power as the ruler of the present evil world (Gal 1:4). Today, for example, Christians in at least 50 countries are suffering from all manner of persecution.

In contrast, **the gap theory** teaches that the devil was not “a liar and a murderer from the beginning” but rather became a liar and a murderer millions or billions of years later. It also attributes imaginary powers to Satan over immense periods of time, during which his devilish exploits are said to have taken place and it is **he** who initiates war against God – at least twice (and possibly in the future, too).

Not only that but after God had cast the devil down to the “initial earth”, sometime during its 4.6 billion-year history, it is said that the Almighty continued to allow Satan access to the heavenly realms – from the beginning of the “renovation” right up till now! This is in spite of the fact that just before Jesus’s crucifixion, He proclaimed, “Now [at this present time] shall the prince of the world be cast out” (John 12:21).

Considering all of these things, I cannot see how the gap theory is from God. Rather, it is a diabolical teaching that elevates the devil’s claimed powers and has all the hallmarks of a doctrine formulated by the father of deception and lies.

A Composite and Compromised Theology

In my investigations, I have shown how the gap theory is a creation doctrine shaped by the ancient Babylonian mystery religion, and which has partially adopted today’s evolutionism (the secular/mystical philosophy of an ancient earth).

For example, gap creation accepts Charles Lyell's theory of uniformitarianism (ie. evolution's geological time units of eons, eras, periods and epochs), which proposes to explain the history of the earth in terms of long ages. This is in spite of the fact that all the geological features making up earth's history can be explained scientifically as a result of sudden catastrophic events, i.e. the global flood in Noah's day in a judgement clearly communicated in God's Word (Gen 6:6-7). (Refer to Chapter 7, 'How is the Age of the Earth Measured?')

Gap creation also accepts the Big Bang theory of evolutionary cosmology, utilising concepts that are at odds with Scripture and a timeframe and sequence of events that could not be more different from the Genesis account. (Refer Chapter 6, 'Cosmology and the Age of the Earth'.)

Moreover, gap creationism is a creation story that attempts to accommodate the anti-God-of-the-Bible science establishment. And, in more ardent circles, its advocates join in ridiculing the literal and plain reading of Genesis as understood by Moses and the ancient Hebrews, as well as the world's most renowned Hebraists today, claiming it to be ignorant and dangerous. (Refer to Chapter 8, 'Six Biblical Conundrums of the Gap Theory'.)

A New Version of an Old Creation Myth

When I began my Christian journey (37 years ago) I was a gap creationist. Not because I had studied into it or could see any merits in its claims, but because I passively fell in with what my church taught me. (And besides, all those scientists couldn't be wrong about an ancient earth, could they?) Fifteen years later, when someone challenged me with young earth creation arguments against Darwinian evolution, I began to research the matter. This gave me a good foundation when I was later confronted with theistic evolutionary teachings with all its unbiblical baggage.

Even so, I had never really examined the old-earth gap theory narrative, which I had simply pushed to one side and saw as irrelevant. After all, I reasoned, it didn't embrace biological evolution, so it couldn't be THAT bad. But when a friend threw down his gap-creation gauntlet, making disparaging comments against young earth creationists and stating emphatically that Genesis 1 describes a renovation of at least one creation, I knew I had to get to the bottom of the matter.

Either way, I just wanted to know the Truth.

Over the last few years (as documented on my website), I have learnt that the gap theory has all the elements of a pagan cosmogony: ie. a colossal intergalactic battle of the gods, resulting in great destruction throughout the universe.

Furthermore, it has proven to be a creation narrative shaped by the Chaldean/Babylonian mystery religions and which relies on the writings of second century Jewish occult scholars and the (admitted) controversial teachings of certain 19th century Bible commenters. (Refer to Chapter 10, 'The Gap Principle and Kabbalah Connection'.) These ideas have then been conjectured into the Scriptures.

Add to this mix the widely accepted ancient-earth teaching proclaimed in evolutionary geology and cosmology and we have a new version of an old-creation myth.

But surely Satan's masterstroke has been, in effect, to implant this pretend story (a construct of his heart's desire: "I will be like the Most High") indirectly into the *very beginning of God's Word* itself, by way of an esoteric, fragmented gap theory narrative. And then to deceive Christians into taking this walk in the dark. After all, the next best thing to have actually ruled the planet for billions of years, fought God and destroyed His creation, is to make people *think* he had. (I have explored this in the history and origin of the gap theory in Chapters 9 and 10.)

God's Word warns about deception – not to the world, which is already deceived, but to believers in Christ. Not only are we to receive the word in all readiness of mind and read the Scriptures daily, *but*

we are also instructed to check whether or not what we are being told is true (Acts 17:11). God commands us to “preach the word” (2 Tim 4:2), not look to “Jewish fables and commandments of men who turn from the truth” (Titus 1:14).

We are told: “Be diligent to present yourself approved to God, a worker who does not need to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth” (2 Tim 2:15). And the only way to do this is to see if a particular teaching conforms to ALL corresponding verses in the Bible, and make a judgment according to the weightier side of Scripture – in faith. I am also reminded of the apostle Paul’s message to the Corinthians – not to become conceited with the belief that we have special knowledge to go beyond what God has clearly communicated:

“Now these things, brethren, I have figuratively transferred to myself and Apollos for your sakes, that you may learn in us not to think beyond what is written, that none of you may be puffed up on behalf of one against the other.” (1 Cor 4:6)

Going “Deeper” Than God’s Word

Reflecting on all these things, I have come to the following conclusions. The gospel message, as preached throughout the New Testament, is just not sufficient for some people, neither is the Bible itself. And so they go in search of hidden knowledge to make their Christian journey more interesting, exciting and relevant, in their minds and to others. Such people do not believe God when he said, *“I have not spoken in secret, in a dark place of the earth”* (Is 45:19). And so they want to “dig deeper” than what God has told us “clearly and not in riddles” (Num 12:8). As a consequence they wander off onto any number of rabbit tracks that criss-cross the theological landscape in their search for “special meanings” to fulfil their perceived needs.

The gap theory/gap principle is one of those recondite, meandering rabbit tracks. This is because it offers an attractive shared path with the old-age philosophy of the world along with an enticing and mysterious way to interpret the Scriptures (“Did God really say?”; Gen 3:5.)

And because there is no consensus among gap creationists regarding most of what was supposed to have occurred during this gap time-period (nor can there ever be any consensus, for it is a lie), it is a rabbit track that, inevitably, splinters off into any number of equally enigmatic trails.

This has become apparent to me by the very fact that I have spoken to dozens of gap theorists and each one has his or her very own version of events. They even admit, ‘This is what *I* believe’. And I am not referring to minor issues. For example, some say there could have been any number of creations before this one. Some say God created soulless humanoids on the “initial creation” in preparation for the creation of man; some say the devil ruled over a form of intelligent beings who had the intellectual capability to buy and sell goods (quoting Eze 28:16); others disagree with both these views.

Some say God destroyed the “original creation” and others say Satan destroyed it. Some say God could have changed the nature of all biological life on the “initial creation” after Satan rebelled. (Although why God would curse a physical creation on account of a spirit being’s sin, they can’t explain.) Others claim Satan could have had the power to do this; yet others insist that suffering and carnivory and death was God’s original ecological system and it is not connected to any curse.

Yet others say that they don’t believe in a previous creation, or that the devil ruled it, but they still maintain that an unspecified period of time existed between Genesis 1:1-2. One person claimed this time was necessary for God to be able to create the physical materials needed before He started putting it all together. Another said that God created the earth as a rock and left it floating in space for a length of time before Day 1 of the creation week (applying some elements of secular geological reasoning). And there are many other explanations. None of which are supported by Scriptures and all of which lack faith to believe what God has distinctly told us he did (Luke 18:8).

“Then **God said**, ‘Let there be light’; **and there was light**... Then **God said**... ‘Let there be a firmament in the midst of the waters ... Let the dry land appear’; **and it was so**... Then **God said**, ‘Let the earth bring forth grass, the herb that yields seed and the fruit tree that yields fruit...’; **and it was so**.

Then **God said**, ‘Let there be lights in the firmament to divide the day from the night... Let the waters abound with an abundance of living creatures and let birds fly above the earth... Let the earth bring forth the living creatures according to its kind: cattle and creeping thing and beast of the earth...; **and it was so**. Then **God said**, ‘Let Us make man in Our image ...’ (**Gen 1**)

“Let all the earth fear the LORD; Let all the inhabitants of the world stand in awe of Him. **For He spoke, and it was done; He commanded, and it stood fast**” (Ps 33:8-9).

The fact is, it doesn’t matter what **we think** or what **we believe** or what **could have happened**. The only thing that matters is what **GOD SAID happened!**

“For in six days the LORD made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested the seventh day: wherefore the LORD blessed the sabbath day, and hallowed it” (Ex 20:11).

This is the description of the first and only version of the earth, in which God made EVERYTHING – heaven and earth and all that is in them. The Bible does speak of a second earth, but that will not take place until the fulfilment of several events (1 Thess 4:16-17; Revelation 20; 1 Cor 15:25-26; 1 John 3:2). Only then will the physical heavens and earth, and all that is in them, have served their purpose, and they will perish. “Like a cloak you will fold them up, and they will be changed” (Heb 1:10-13).

“Now I saw a new heaven and a new earth, *for the first heaven and the first earth had passed away*. Also there was no more sea. Then I, John, saw the holy city, New Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband” (Rev 21).

In short, the Bible only speaks about two creations – the first, in which heaven and earth were made in six days, and the second, which will come into existence after the millennium.

Gap Creation’s Need to Correct the Bible

Gap creationism (and all old-earth theories) alter our view of Scripture, by insisting that God’s Word is not enough by itself. And so a person is directed to “experts” who believe they have a more accurate knowledge to that of Moses, Jesus and Paul as recorded in the Bible:

In Gen 1:2, they say, the word “**was**” should have been “**became**”. And in Genesis chapters 1 and 2, the word “**made**” should be “**remade**”, and the word “**created**” should be “**re-created**”. Furthermore, Jesus used the wrong word in **Mark 10:6**, where he should have specified “in the beginning of the “**re-creation**” God made them male and female”.

Also, Scripture is wrong in Gen 1:16, when it states that on the fourth day “God **made** the two great lights... [and] he **made** the stars, also”. This is because the sun, moon and stars had been made billions of years **before** the earth, in accordance with secular cosmology. And in John 8:44, Jesus must have been mistaken when He claimed that the devil “was a murderer **from the beginning**”, because the devil did not rebel and commit murder (of Adam and all humanity to follow) **until billions of years after he was created**. (Refer to Chapter 1, ‘The Gap Theory’s Distortion of Language’, and Chapter 3, Devil in the Garden’.)

And when the apostle Paul said that **death is the enemy and the result of sin**, and the **WHOLE creation was subjected to bondage** and groans in pain, he really only meant **part of it**. This is because suffering and death were natural biological processes already existing in the “initial creation”

for billions of years **before** Adam sinned (1 Cor 15:26; Rom 8:20-22). (Refer to Chapter 5, 'How Did Evil Develop?') And so on and so on...

The belief among some Christians that the clear reading of Scripture is misleading or not sufficient, and the subsequent desire of wanting to “go beyond what is written” (1 Cor 4:6), is an ingeniously contrived diversion formulated by the god of this world. That is because all of these theological rabbit tracks have one thing in common.

They are designed by our Adversary, the devil, to draw the focus of believers into ungodly mysteries and *away from what matters most*, or at least to plant unstable ideas in our minds that question the clarity, steadfastness, power and authority of God’s word. And the more a person strays from the plumbline of God’s Word, the further they can be led, degree by degree, step by step, away from the narrow path, especially, as the Bible warns, in the latter days (1 Tim 4:2; 2 Thess 2:3).

Or maybe that is how we began our Christian journey and we need to ***discover*** the plumbline of God’s word!

Considering all these diversional tracks leads me to my final “chapter” – What is the Gospel?

*“But I fear, lest somehow, as the serpent deceived Eve by his craftiness, so your minds may be corrupted from the **simplicity that is in Christ**. For if he who comes preaches another Jesus whom we have not preached, or if you receive a different spirit which you have not received, or a different gospel which you have not accepted – you may well put up with it!” (2 Cor 11:3-4)*

WHAT IS THE GOSPEL?

SYNOPSIS: A theological landscape of rabbit tracks – Spoon-fed babes in Christ or mature believers? – The plumbline for thinking for ourselves – What did the apostle Paul say was of “first importance” – The gospel message: too simple for some people? – God’s creation account links to the greatest commandment – Our Creator upholds and reiterates “the history of the heavens and the earth” again and again and again – The consequences of maintaining a lie – What is the biblical definition of “the church”?

I believe there are many sincere followers of Christ who are zealous to seek out “truth” and to share it with others. This passion *is* commendable – it is a wonderful godly characteristic to diligently apply our heart and mind to a matter (Ecc 9:10; Col 2:23).

In contrast to this attitude, the Lord warns of the dangers of losing our enthusiasm and first love, or becoming lukewarm or spiritually dead in the faith (Rev 2:4; Rev 3:26, 1).

In Matthew 25, Jesus tells his disciples the parable of the five wise and five foolish virgins – about those who kept their spiritual lamps filled with oil and those who did not – and the serious consequences for those whose lamp went out because they were not prepared when the bridegroom unexpectedly arrived.

Jesus followed on with the parable of the talents.

“For the kingdom of heaven is like a man traveling to a far country, who called his own servants and delivered his goods to them. And to one he gave five talents, to another two, and to another one, to each according to his own ability; and immediately he went on a journey. Then he who had received the five talents went and traded with them, and made another five talents. And likewise he who had received two gained two more also. But he who had received one went and dug in the ground, and hid his lord’s money. After a long time the lord of those servants came and settled accounts with them.” (Matt 25:14-19)

Those who doubled their talents were commended, and those who did not were condemned.

The moral of the story is that we are accountable to God to multiply the talents and gifts he has given us, for his glory. Those who do are called “good and faithful servants”. Those who don’t are called “wicked and lazy servants”. But sincerity and zeal are not enough, because a person’s faith must be rooted in what the Bible says and not what people *want* the Bible to say (1 Cor 3:18). This is because **truth** is defined by God not us (John 17:17). And if we do not abide in **his truth** and the application of **his love** (1 Cor 13:13) then our sincerity and zeal is worthless, or even dangerous by leading us, and others, off track.

And the most effective way for us to know if we are on track with God’s truth is to immerse ourselves in his Word – the Bible. As the apostle Paul tells us:

“All Scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness, **that the man of God may be complete**, thoroughly equipped for every good work.” (2 Tim 3:16-17)

One believer I know, for example, has an audio of the Bible playing quietly in the background of their home on a continuous loop. Others read the Bible from cover to cover every year. One person I am aware of has done this for 25 years.

“... that we should no longer be children, tossed to and fro and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the trickery of men, in the cunning craftiness of deceitful plotting, but, speaking the truth in love, may grow up in all things into Him who is the head – Christ –.” (Eph 4:14-15)

Part of the reason some Christians find theological rabbit tracks so seductive – i.e. they search out deviations from God's Word – is because they do not see the Bible as sufficient. (Refer to 'Conclusions'.) In some cases, they are part of a church culture that has been built on, and prides itself on, having distinctives. That is, “special knowledge” that is different from everyone else and which is elevated above foundational doctrines of the Christian faith. Unwittingly, these people have been led to a watered down or ill-defined gospel message.

I know this for a fact – because I was one of those people for many, many years.

Christian Maturity – the Ability to Think for Oneself

In the Book of Hebrews, the writer addresses the Jewish Christians living in Jerusalem, chastising them for immature faith. These “babes in Christ” were dull of hearing and unskilled in discerning truth from falsehood. He writes:

“... of whom we have much to say, and hard to explain, since you have become dull of hearing. For though by this time you ought to be teachers, you need someone to teach you again the first principles of the oracles of God; and you have come to need milk and not solid food. For everyone who partakes only of milk is unskilled in the word of righteousness, for he is a babe. But solid food belongs to those who are of full age, that is, those **who by reason of use have their senses exercised to discern both good and evil.**” (Heb 5:11-14)

Looking back I am shocked to realise that I had been a babe in Christ for 26 years! I say “shocked” for a very good reason. From the beginning of my walk with Christ, I turned my worldly life around and attended church every week. I diligently took notes of the sermons, understood repentance, tried to obey God's commandments as best I could and I studied my Bible and prayed most days. I was also involved in supporting other ministries. I grew in faith and the Lord was with me, guiding me and answering my prayers.

But, and this is the crucial part, I never really questioned if what I was being taught on any given topic matched the MAJORITY of Scriptures in the WHOLE Bible.

Like a baby I was being spoon fed and trusted the ministry and the church I was attending to lead me into all truth. And one of their doctrines was the gap theory, which I accepted without question.

This attitude, believing everything the ministry said, had been instilled in me from the beginning, because the first church I attended nurtured this dependency to the point where members who questioned anything were seen as divisive and falling away from the faith. Without realising it, I had embraced the idea that “the church” was a physical and administrative organisation and spiritual authority.

Ten years later this church's entire theology changed course 180 degrees – from being legalistic to being liberal. Nevertheless, I remained there, convinced I was still in the right place. It was not until I was specifically challenged on the subject of creation 16 years later (with the introduction of theistic evolutionary theology) that I was motivated to start thinking for myself. Four years after working through the unbiblical consequences of that creation narrative, I left to join another fellowship. But

within only a few months, I was challenged on the matter of creation yet again, only this time it was on the gap theory. And, once again, I launched into an investigation. This time lasting five years.

Never could I have imagined that by firmly taking hold of the doctrine of creation, as it is plainly described in Scripture, I had grasped a thread that would help me unravel and identify so many distorted and false doctrines I had accepted as truth, including the fact that I had been taught skewed gospel messages for 35 years!

Only then did I realise the need for each believer to learn discernment by placing their faith in the totality of God's Word, not man's word about God. Our great Creator God instructs us to study his word, which is a lamp to our feet and a light to our path (Ps 119:105) and to take the personal responsibility to "work out your own salvation with fear and trembling" (Phil 2:12).

"But you, do not be called 'Rabbi'; for One is your Teacher, the Christ, and you are all brethren. ... And do not be called teachers; for One is your Teacher, the Christ." (Matt 23:8-10)

"These things I have written to you concerning those who try to deceive you. But the anointing which you have received from Him abides in you, and you do not need that anyone teach you; but as the same anointing teaches you concerning all things, and is true, and is not a lie, and just as it has taught you, you will abide in Him." (1 John 2:26-27)

Even the apostle Paul did not claim authority over another person's faith but saw himself as a fellow worker in the faith.

"Now He who establishes us with you in Christ and has anointed us is God, who also has sealed us and given us the Spirit in our hearts as a guarantee. ... Not that we have dominion over your faith, but are fellow workers for your joy; for by faith you stand." (2 Cor 1:21-22, 24)

It must be said that I did receive some good teachings in these churches and I do not claim that anyone deliberately deceived me. Rather, the ministry were merely passing on what they themselves had been taught and accepted as truth (as I myself had done). Furthermore, it was no one's fault but mine that I took so long to realise my error.

Sadly, this is true for so many Christians, including ministers. And when it comes to legalistic churches, most ministers are simply unwilling and ill-equipped to examine long-held and treasured doctrines in light of Scriptures to the contrary. Some even actively discourage the Berean Bible study method among their members, by dismissing, criticising or threatening those who do search the Scriptures and ask questions when the church's teachings do not align with God's Word. This, of course, all depends on how controlling a church organisation is.

All of which has shown me just how much of a hold deception can exert over a person who thinks they could not be deceived. As the old English proverb goes: "There are none so blind as those who refuse to see". Or in the words of God himself: "'Hear this now, O foolish people, Without understanding, Who have eyes and see not, And who have ears and hear not: Do you not fear Me?' says the LORD. 'Will you not tremble at My presence...?'" (Jer 5:22). "... But on this one will I look: On him who is poor and of a contrite spirit, And who trembles at My word" (Is 66:2).

If a person believes they have all truth, they will see no need to "test all things" (1 Thess 5:21), nor to "search the Scriptures daily to find out whether these things are so" (Acts 17:11)? And how is it possible for someone who thinks they already know everything "to grow in grace and knowledge" (2 Pet 3:18)? Also, why would such a person, with seemingly nothing to learn, see a reason to follow God's instructions to "Get wisdom! Get understanding!" (Prov 4:5)? And what is the point of God telling us to "cry out for discernment, and lift up your voice for understanding" if we already have our full share (Pro 2:3)? Furthermore, if we are incapable of being deceived, why do we

need to pray “teach me good judgment and knowledge” (Ps 119:66) and “Lead me in thy truth” (Ps 25:5)? Are all these Scriptures really redundant to some people? Are they redundant to us?

Interestingly, this exploration into the gap theory has also revealed to me the bountiful love and mercy of God. This is because he can still work with individual believers inside church organisations that hold a combination of truth and error to varying degrees.

After realising that I myself had been guilty of not attempting to “prove all things”, I conducted an experiment. I asked many people around me if they could explain what the gospel message was, *and almost all were unsure or did not know* (including devout believers who had attended church for 40 or 50 years)! Others responded with a distorted gospel message, which was only partially true. And when I made plain the gospel, as proclaimed by the apostle Paul – that Christ’s death and resurrection were “of first importance” (1 Cor 15:1-4) – some people even dismissed it as being (perceived) as too simple, because, as I was told, “everyone knows that”.

Maybe so, but does everyone appreciate the depth of what Christ has done for them personally, and what this means for us individually and for all mankind? Are we humbled by this knowledge and do we thank God every day, or would we rather go in search of “something more interesting” and only think about it now and then or once a year at The Lord’s Supper? When we focus on the meaning of the Cross, we focus on the depth of God’s grace and love for us, the corollary of which is to walk the path Jesus commanded.

“For God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have everlasting life.” (John 3:16)

“This is My commandment, that you love one another as I have loved you. Greater love has no one than this, than to lay down one’s life for his friends.” (John 15:12-13)

And the fact is, theological rabbit tracks are a deviation from that path. That is the reason I have created this website, to share what I have learnt about the great deception of the gap theory (or any other old-earth creation theory) and how it *does* affect our faith and understanding of God and his Word.

This is because any other explanation of the creation account, to that which God has clearly described in Genesis, strikes a mighty blow to the heart of fundamental Christian doctrines and the true gospel message.

Fortunately, God is loving, patient, kind and slow to anger, and he does not want any one of us to fail (Ps 86:15; Rev 2 and 3).

“But thou, O Lord, art a God full of compassion, and gracious, longsuffering, and plenteous in mercy and truth” (Ps 86:15).

“... being confident of this very thing, that He who has begun a good work in you will complete it until the day of Jesus Christ” (Phil 1:6).

What the Gospel is Not!

Some time ago, I came across a very interesting YouTube video by Christian author **Dr John Williams Robbins**, ‘Evangelism and the Defense of the Faith’. Robbins explained that evangelism and the defence of the faith cannot be grasped until some elementary ideas are realised. In earlier times, he said, these ideas were thoroughly understood by Christians and even those who profess to be believers, but this is no longer so in our 21st century postmodern culture. Rather, many churches today are more interested in intellectual theorising, searching for special knowledge or chasing spiritual experiences.

The root of the word evangelism, he explained, is to take the gospel (good news) into all the world (Mark 16:15-16). But what is the good news? What is the gospel? He followed by providing a long list of **what the gospel is not**, which is too lengthy for me to include here. After this, he went straight to a number of Scriptures that explain **exactly what the gospel is**. It is to proclaim the death and resurrection of Jesus Christ for the forgiveness of sins by God's grace; our required response to it – belief, repentance, baptism and the keeping of his commandments (John 14:21-23); and to grow in the fruit of the Spirit (Gal 5:14-26). It is also to take the good news of the kingdom of God – the salvation of all mankind under Christ our King – to all the whole world.

The apostle Paul preached what should be “of first importance” in our lives. If it is not, we have believed in vain.

“Now, brothers and sisters, I want to remind you of the gospel I preached to you, which you received and on which you have taken your stand. By this gospel you are saved, if you hold firmly to the word I preached to you. Otherwise, you have believed in vain. For what I received I passed on to you **as of first importance: that Christ died for our sins according to the Scriptures, that he was buried, that he was raised on the third day according to the Scriptures...**” (1 Cor 15:1-4)

And Jesus tells us what our response must be to the good news of the kingdom:

“Now after John was put in prison, Jesus came to Galilee, **preaching the gospel of the kingdom of God**, and saying, ‘**The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God is at hand. Repent, and believe in the gospel.**’” (Mark 1:14-15)

The first stage of the kingdom of God would begin in the hearts and minds of repentant believers. This event would occur with the coming of the Holy Spirit at the commencement of the first century church on the day of Pentecost. It would start as small as a mustard seed and be unobservable to the eye (Mark 4:30-31). Jesus described it thus: “The kingdom of God does not come with observation; nor will they say, ‘See here!’ or ‘See there!’ For indeed, the kingdom of God is within you,” (Luke 17:20-21).

The second phase will be when the whole world witnesses Christ's return in power and glory as King of kings, Lord of lords and Prince of Peace. “Behold, He is coming with clouds, and every eye will see Him, even they who pierced Him. And all the tribes of the earth will mourn because of Him. Even so, Amen” (Rev 1:7).

I acknowledge there are various eschatological views and, as a pre-millennialist, it is my understanding that when Christ returns he will rule over the earth for 1000 years with the saints, who will be in the first resurrection (Eph 1:21). “And they **lived and reigned with Christ for a thousand years**. But the rest of the dead did not live again until the thousand years were finished. **This is the first resurrection**” (Rev 20:1-10). “And he who overcomes, and keeps My works until the end, to him I will give power **over the nations**” (Rev 2:26).

After this millennial period, when Christ has vanquished all enemies, He will deliver the kingdom of God to the Father and there will be a new heavens and a new earth.

“Then comes the end, when He delivers the kingdom to God the Father, when He puts an end to all rule and all authority and power. **For He must reign till He has put all enemies under His feet.**” (1 Cor 15:24-25)

“That in the dispensation of the fulness of times he might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heaven, and which are on earth; even in him.” (Eph 1:10)

“Now I saw a new heaven and a new earth, for the first heaven and the first earth had passed away. Also there was no more sea. Then I, John, saw the holy city, New Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband.”(Rev 21:1-2)

Having explained that, I would now like to examine just one distorted gospel message. The one I was taught.

Yes it does proclaim salvation through Christ’s crucifixion and resurrection and the kingdom of God, but it is only partially based on the Bible’s description. This is because it is fashioned on the false creation doctrine of the gap theory.

That is, it holds the erroneous belief that Satan is the ruler of the earth and lord over all nations (in conflict with Rom 13:1), and the kingdom of God **cannot** commence until Christ physically returns to bind the devil and take his throne through force. (Refer to Chapter 4, ‘The Devil Cast Down to the Earth’.)

Consequently, this church teaches the second-stage fulfillment of the kingdom of God: that when Christ returns, he will set up his kingdom on earth. However, the first stage, in which Christ began the kingdom as small as a mustard seed among his people, at the commencement of his church 2000 years ago, is rejected. So although the Bible says that believers are now citizens of heaven under the lordship of Jesus Christ, this church teaches that believers are still citizens of the earth under the god of this world, until Christ returns.

These are two *very* different views about our status before God and our relationship with Christ.

It is too long and complicated to go into details here about how the gap theory creation narrative and its ensuing faulty concept of the kingdom of God has infected so many of that church’s doctrines. But, suffice to say, it has resulted in a legalistic church where believers are regarded as citizens of this world, and obedience to the Law is seen as somewhat justifying them before God. The apostle Paul, however, explains clearly what should be of “first importance” – that Jesus Christ died for our sins (1 Cor 15:3).

“... knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law but by faith in Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Christ Jesus, that we might be justified by faith in Christ and not by the works of the law; for by the works of the law no flesh shall be justified.” (Gal 2:16)

In fact, Christ doesn’t get much of a mention at all in that church, which is hardly surprising when we consider how much the devil’s power and role have been embellished in its gap theory teachings. I clearly remember one sermon that did focus on Jesus, but only after the speaker had first apologised, because he did not want to sound “Protestant”. Afterwards, some said we should not focus on Jesus but on the Father. Not only that but members are not encouraged to personally share their faith with others but rather to leave the “preaching of the gospel” to the church’s media (through their tithes and offerings).

Part of the collateral damage of such a twisted gospel is that any talk of God’s love is automatically equated to lawlessness and thus rarely mentioned. In fact, we barely ever had a sermon on God’s love and none at all on God’s grace (that I can remember). Messages on faith were also in short supply. The outcome was a complex web of truth and falsehoods and a Christian journey that was all about individuals working to establish their own righteousness in order to qualify to become kings and priests in the coming kingdom (Rev 5:10).

Unwittingly, perhaps, this perspective seeded an attitude of judgmentalism and a focus that was more on oneself than on Christ.

Tracing the serious errors of a skewed gospel brings me back to the essence of this exploration – the importance of standing on the foundation of the creation story as told by God and penned by Moses. And I urge anyone who struggles with faith that God **CREATED** all things in heaven and earth out of nothing in six days, and rested on the literal **SEVENTH DAY** of create time, to take this matter seriously and ask Him for help: “Lord, I believe, help my unbelief” (Mark 9:24) and to follow the Scriptures/evidence wherever it leads.

After all, it can be no small matter that God has repeated his six-day creation account, of **how** and **when** the physical realm came into being, **three times** in two verses in Genesis 2 alone – just in case we didn’t get it the first time, or the second time! *And, once again, there is not one mention of a re-creation or any more than a one, seven-day period for the creation week.*

“Thus the heavens and the earth, and all the host of them, were finished. And on the **seventh day** God ended His work which He had done, and He rested on the **seventh day** from all His work which He had done. Then God blessed the **seventh day** and sanctified it, because in it He rested from all His work which God had **created** and **made**. **This is the history of the heavens and the earth when they were created**, in the day that the LORD God **made** the earth and the heavens *before any plant of the field was in the earth and before any herb of the field had grown...*” (Gen 2:1-5).

And as if the above Scriptures were not enough, God repeated his creation account *again* and *again*, to Moses who wrote it down as he was commanded (Num 33:2).

“For in six days the LORD **made heaven and earth**, the sea, and all that in them is, and **rested the seventh day**: wherefore the LORD blessed the sabbath day, and hallowed it” (Ex 20:11).

“It is a sign between Me and the children of Israel forever; for in six days the LORD **made the heavens and the earth**, and on the **seventh day He rested** and was refreshed” (Ex 31:17).

God’s Word Must Be Our Primary Authority:

Jesus, the Good Shepherd, knew the faith of believers would be severely tested in the latter days, and he prayed earnestly to the Father to protect His sheep. “I am the good shepherd; and I know My sheep, and am known by My own” (John 10:14). But that protection is only available if we place our faith in the truth as expounded in the written Word of God and not the Oral Law or the written word of men or women. (Refer to Chapter 9, ‘History of the Gap Theory’.)

“I do not pray that You should take them out of the world, but that You should keep them from the evil one. They are not of the world, just as I am not of the world. **Sanctify them by Your truth. Your word is truth**” (John 17:15-17).

The apostle Peter unequivocally tells us what that gospel is. It is to spread the word about the life, death and resurrection of Jesus Christ, his atonement for the sins of all mankind, and the coming of his kingdom (John 3:16: Mark 16:25). It is to proclaim God’s grace and forgiveness, and our salvation and eternal life, made possible through our belief in what Jesus has done for us, and our response by repenting, being baptised and obeying the commandments of our Lord and Saviour.

“‘Therefore let all the house of Israel know assuredly that God has made this Jesus, **whom you crucified**, both Lord and Christ.’ Now when they heard this, they were cut to the heart, and said to Peter and the rest of the apostles, ‘Men and brethren, what shall we do?’ Then Peter said to them, ‘Repent, and let every one of you be baptized in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins; and you shall receive the gift of the Holy Spirit.’” (Acts 2:36-38)

The gospel message, as penned in the New Testament centres on Jesus’s commission on earth and our required response to it.

Any other gospel is a distortion or false!

“For Christ did not send me to baptise, **but to preach the gospel, not with wisdom of words, lest the cross of Christ should be made of no effect.** For the message of the cross is foolishness to those who are perishing, but to us who are being saved it is the power of God. For it is written: ‘I will destroy the wisdom of the wise, And bring to nothing the understanding of the prudent.’

“Where is the wise? Where is the scribe? Where is the disputer of this age? Has not God made foolish the wisdom of this world? For since, in the wisdom of God, the world through wisdom did not know God, it pleased God through the foolishness of the message preached to save those who believe. For Jews request a sign, and Greeks seek after wisdom; **but we preach Christ crucified**, to the Jews a stumbling block and to the Greeks foolishness...” (1 Cor 1:17-23)

“For if I preach the gospel, I have nothing to boast of, for necessity is laid upon me; yes, **woe is me if I do not preach the gospel!**” (1 Cor 9:16)

The apostle Paul, who was struck down by God on the road to Damascus and taught personally by Jesus Christ for three years in Arabia before he began his ministry, knew the focus of the Christian faith and he did not deviate from it throughout his ministry (Gal 1:11-20).

“I press toward the **goal** [mark] for the prize of the upward call of God in Christ Jesus.” (Phil 3:14)

“But God forbid that I should **boast except in the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom the world has been crucified to me**, and I to the world” (Gal 6:14).

“And I, brethren, when I came to you, did not come with excellence of speech or of wisdom declaring to you the testimony of God. For I determined **not to know anything among you except Jesus Christ and Him crucified.**” (1 Cor 2:2)

Paul warned believers to be aware of the devil’s deceptions. This is because if we – laypeople, ministers or theologians – are embarrassed or offended by, or dismiss, the simplicity that is in Christ Jesus and *His gospel message*, and we insist on maintaining any lie with zeal and intensity, there *are* consequences.

“So, as much as is in me, I am ready to preach the gospel to you who are in Rome also. **For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ, for it is the power of God to salvation for everyone who believes**, for the Jew first and also for the Greek.” (Rom 1:15-16)

And the consequence of bypassing what is “of first importance” and remaining on a side-track where we began our Christian journey, or becoming side-tracked, *will* affect our relationship with God to some degree. That is why God instructs us to “Prove all things, hold fast that which is good” (1 Thess 5:21).

God’s Word instructs us to imitate the apostle Paul, as he imitated Christ (1 Cor 11:1). Yet there are many preachers today who claim we should follow them, even though many of their teachings do not match those of Paul’s.

“But I fear, lest somehow, as the serpent deceived Eve by his craftiness, so your minds **may be corrupted from the simplicity that is in Christ.** For if he who comes preaches **another Jesus** whom we have not preached, or if you receive a different spirit which you have not received, or **a different gospel** which you have not accepted – you may well put up with it!” (2 Cor 11:3-4)

Paul was deeply concerned that the church in Corinth would fall for “another Jesus” and “a different gospel”! He also warned against handling God’s word *with deception or distortion*.

“Rather, we have renounced secret and shameful ways; **we do not use deception, nor do we distort the word of God**. On the contrary, by setting forth the truth plainly we commend ourselves to everyone’s conscience in the sight of God.” (2 Cor 4:2)

And in his message to the church in Galatia, Paul was astounded that they were also falling for a false and perverse gospel.

“I am astonished that you are so quickly deserting the one who called you to live in the grace of Christ and are turning to a **different gospel** – which is really **no gospel at all**. Evidently some people are throwing you into confusion and are **trying to pervert the gospel of Christ**.” (Gal 1:6-7)

And in 1 Tim 1:3-4, Paul instructs Timothy to stay in Ephesus “so that you may command certain people **not to teach false doctrines any longer**” because “such things promote controversial speculations rather than advancing God’s work” and the faith. A little further on, Paul tells Timothy, “**Watch your life and doctrine closely**. Persevere in them, because if you do, **you will save both yourself and your hearers**” (1 Tim 4:16). Paul also urges Timothy to “preach the word” because the time will come when the people will embrace “unsound doctrine” by looking to “a great number of teachers to say what their itching ears want to hear”. These people will shut their minds to the truth and correction (**2 Tim 4:2-4**). Furthermore, the Bible calls to repentance believers in churches that have become **compromised with false doctrines**, such as those of Balaam and the Nicolaitans, and those who “corrupt the word of God” (Rev 2:14-16; 2 Cor 2:17).

And all of these warnings are directed to Christians not those whose minds are veiled (2 Cor 4:3).

Jesus gave the same warning to his disciples (followers), saying that even the elect could be, and some would be, deceived into believing false doctrines, particularly just prior to his return.

When his disciples came to see him on the Mount of Olives, asking, “What will be the sign of Your coming, and of the end of the age?”, the **first warning** Jesus gave was this: “Take heed that no one deceives you ... many false prophets will rise up and deceive many... See, I have told you beforehand” (Matthew 24). And, as I have learned, all old-earth creation narratives are ready to line up with the greatest deception the world will ever experience. (Refer to Chapter 11, ‘Gap Creationism and the End Time’.)

One thing is sure – anyone who is comfortable in the belief that they can’t be deceived is already deceived (Rev 3:17)!

Set Free from Theological Shackles by the Truth of God’ Word

I now attend a Christian fellowship that endeavours to place its faith completely in God’s Word, which includes the CREATION account as it is plainly described by God in Genesis 1 and elsewhere in the Bible. This church does not look to the “fleshly wisdom” devised by the teachings of one man or a group of men (2 Cor 1:12). (I’ve experienced both over 35 years.) Or, indeed, the teachings of one woman. Nor does it apply “special interpretations” to a few Scriptures that conflict with the plain reading of other Scriptures.

This is a fellowship of believers that wants to grow in God’s truth, and it acknowledges the dangers of deception that we are each subject to. Thus it encourages the application of the Berean principle to prove all things (Acts 17:11).

Most important of all, it does not divert from the gospel message as proclaimed by the apostle Paul. That is because at its heart and core is the appreciation of the magnitude of Christ's sacrifice as atonement for ours sins and the need to take this knowledge into all the world.

I have also learned the importance of being part of a fellowship that does not define "the church" in physical terms. That is, claiming it is an organisation that has all truth (and is thus infallible) and dictates almost every aspect of what an individual must believe, from which they must not deviate.

Such churches employ a hierarchical system of government ruling from the top down, elevating the ministry and church traditions above the congregation and God's Word. From this controlling perspective, the church must come first at all costs and individuals with different points of view are seen as wrong and disposable.

A system like this, based on the "corporate" journey of a church organisation and not the individual believer, cannot, by definition, be founded on the greatest commandment of all – love – as described by Jesus.

"A new commandment I give to you, that you love one another; as I have loved you, that you also love one another." (John 13:34)

The fellowship I now attend embraces the biblical definition of "the church", which is the spiritual body of all believers – *the ekklesia*– Greek for "the whole body of Christians scattered throughout the earth". And the head of each person is not the ministry, but Jesus Christ. "For there is one God and one Mediator between God and men, the Man Christ Jesus" (1 Tim 2:5).

Here, each believer, wherever they are, is equally valued for the gifts God has bestowed upon them as "individual" members in the greater body of Christ, which itself constitutes a holy priesthood on a shared journey. This spiritual body is also known as the "invisible church". These are called-out individuals who have accepted Christ as their Lord and Saviour, not merely visible attendees, or members, of a church organisation (John 6:44,65; John 14:6; 1 Pet 2:9,21; John 15:16; Rom 8:28).

"Then Jesus said to those Jews who believed Him, 'If you abide in My word, you are My disciples indeed. And you shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free'." (John 8:31-32)

"Coming to Him as to a living stone, rejected indeed by men, but chosen by God and precious, you also, as living stones, are being built up a spiritual house, a holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices acceptable to God through Jesus Christ." (1 Pet 2:4-5)

Only through the Cross can we experience God's grace and forgiveness for our sins, be reconciled to our Creator, receive the gift of the Holy Spirit and eternal life and enter into the Kingdom now. No other doctrine expresses the goodness and mercy of God and "to grasp how wide and long and high and deep is the love of Christ" (Eph 3:17-19).

The question is, do we realise this, and is the enormity of Christ's sacrifice at the heart of our faith and worship? For he is the only door to enter into the kingdom of God. Or are we busy scampering along theological rabbit tracks, which, at best divert our attention from what really counts, and at worst lead us into serious doctrinal error and away from the cross? Or perhaps we are more focused on trying to establish our own righteousness through obedience to the Law, instead of surrendering to Christ in gratitude and in light of God's love and grace for us.

In summary, what I have learnt over these last nine years is that ALL old-earth creation narratives deviate from what God has clearly told us and have the potential to take us further and further away from the plumbline of God's Word and its focus on the Cross.

“Coming to Him as to a living stone, rejected indeed by men, but chosen by God and precious, you also, as living stones, are being built up a spiritual house, a holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices acceptable to God through Jesus Christ.” (1 Pet 2:4-5)

“It is the glory of God to conceal a matter, But the glory of kings is to search out a matter.” (Ps 25:2)

ABOUT

Why This Exploration of the Gap Theory?

God’s true creation account is important – very important! This is because whatever we believe about original sin, and how and when evil, suffering and death entered into the creation, will have a profound effect on how we view major doctrines of the Christian faith. That is, if we want to hold God’s Word in the highest esteem and be *consistent* in our faith, understanding and communications.

My Christian journey is a little complicated. I began by attending a church in 1984 that taught the gap theory. I never thought to question it back then. This church later split and my husband and I found ourselves in a denomination that, over time, replaced gap creationism with theistic evolution – i.e. the belief that God created using evolutionary processes, which was said to bring the Bible more into line with secular science.

After spending years examining hundreds and hundreds of arguments supporting theistic evolution – all of which, when followed through to their theological (and scientific) conclusions, disappeared into murkiness and mysticism – we left to join another fellowship. There we found we were back in gap theory territory again. And it wasn’t long before we soon came to realise that this creation narrative was not just a side teaching of this particular church.

Rather, it was held to be sacrosanct and central to its theology – never to be questioned – and essential to preaching the true gospel and knowing God!

Those who hold to the belief in one recent creation, it was said, fail to consider the devil’s rebellion; don’t see the devil as ruling the earth; do not understand why evil exists in our world; are disobedient to God; hold to a different gospel message; and may not even know God. Young earth creationism, it was proclaimed from the pulpit, was a “satanic heresy designed to cover up the doctrine of sin”.

It was this extreme defense of the gap theory that led us into an in-depth exploration of this doctrine, to see if there could be any truth in it. Never did we imagine it would result in thousands of hours of research, as we uncovered more and more information about this teaching.

During this time, we learned about the history of gap creation, the magnitude of its theological consequences, including how it distorts the power of the devil and the gospel of Jesus Christ, and even its end-time ramifications.

Accepting the Challenge

Being well-informed young earth creationists for 20 years, we accepted the gap theory challenge – not to prove young earth creation is true, *but to see IF the gap theory could withstand serious scrutiny*. After all, God expects all of his people to look to his word for truth, and to think deeply about what we are being taught, because truth *does* matter. And it is our individual responsibility to check things out “to find out whether these things are so” (Acts 17:11).

In the verse below, the apostle Paul gave instructions and a warning – not directed to the general public but specifically to believers in Christ.

“Stand therefore, having girded your waist with truth, having put on the breastplate of righteousness, ... And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God; praying

always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, being watchful to this end with all perseverance and supplication for all the saints..." (Eph 6:14,17-18)

And in the Book of Acts, we are told.

"The [Bereans] were more fair-minded than those in Thessalonica, in that they received the word with all readiness, and searched the Scriptures daily *to find out whether these things were so.*" (Acts 17:11)

With gap creation arguments raining down on me from several well-versed quarters, I knew I had a challenge on my hands. This concerned me, because if the gap theory were true it would change my view of Scripture. That is, I would not be capable of understanding the Word of God without others interpreting it for me. Why? Because anyone simply reading the Bible, as it is plainly written and without input from human beings (e.g. theologians, scientists and mystics) would *never* come up with a gap theory or any other ancient earth narrative. Such a perspective is only possible if a person lends their ear to the explanations and extrapolations of outside voices.

Nevertheless, the challenge was set before me and, as my husband said, "You want to know the truth, don't you? So what are you worried about?" This strengthened my resolve to follow the arguments, wherever they led. Soon our exploration into the gap theory became an exciting and faith-building exercise. And what we discovered shocked us, especially when we came to realise where the idea of a gap, between Gen 1:1-2, had originated (ancient Babylon), what it truly signified (elevating the devil's powers and diminishing the role of Jesus Christ).

How This Subject Has Been Compiled and Presented

Important: What I am going to investigate here (the gap theory) is either a new truth (first developed and popularised about 120 years ago by a number of Protestant theologians) or it is a monumental deception. It cannot be both! One characteristic of deception is that the person who proclaims it may genuinely be deceived themselves, believing his/her teaching to be true – when in fact it is not! Thus I do not claim, in this investigation, that anyone is knowingly setting out to deceive others! Only God can be the judge of that.

This research has been divided into 12 main subjects, taking the form of chapters of differing lengths. These examine the arguments/ consequences presented to me by a number of gap-creation defenders. After this, I have summarised my Conclusion on the matter, and review the true Gospel message (as shown in the Menu bar at the top).

Gap Theory Challenge

- 1) The gap theory's necessary distortion of language.
- 2) Does young earth creation deny evil originated from the devil?
- 3) The devil in the garden.
- 4) When was the devil cast down to earth?
- 5) How did evil develop?
- 6) Cosmology and the age of the earth.
- 7) How is the age of the earth measured?
- 8) Six biblical conundrums of the gap theory.

- 9) The history of the gap theory.
- 10) The gap principle and Kabbalah connection.
- 11) Gap creationism and the end time.
- 12) In the beginning – a young earth creation narrative.

I don't pretend to have all the answers, and I know that not all young earth creationists will agree with everything I have presented here, but I do believe my arguments tick all the biblical boxes and join the theological dots. Not only that, but this exploration shows that the creation story is all about God – *not all about the devil.*

"I will meditate on the glorious splendour of Your majesty, And on Your wondrous works."
(Ps 145:5)

“Remind them of these things, charging them before the Lord not to strive about words to no profit, to the ruin of the hearers. Be diligent to present yourself approved to God, a worker who does not need to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth.” (2 Tim 2:14-15)

INFORMATIONAL RESOURCES

Here I have listed a number of informational websites relevant to this gap theory exploration. I have also included some other valuable links for Bible students. These address matters of theology, science, history, world affairs and prophecy – in articles and on video.

GAP THEORY DOCTRINE

- **Got Questions**

www.gotquestions.org/gap-theory.html

- **Blue Letter Bible**

www.blueletterbible.org/faq/don_stewart/don_stewart_654.cfm

- **Creation Ministry International**

creation.com/images/pdfs/cabook/chapter3.pdf

- **What is the Gap Theory?**

carm.org/gap-theory

- **Answers in Genesis:**

answersingenesis.org/genesis/gap-theory/what-about-the-gap-and-ruin-reconstruction-theories

- **Institute of Creation Research**

www.icr.org/article/why-gap-theory-wont-work

- **The Gap Theory of Genesis Chapter One**

bible.org/article/gap-theory-genesis-chapter-onewww.icr.org/article/why-gap-theory-wont-work

- **What is the Gap Theory?**

www.thoughtco.com/what-is-the-gap-theory-701497

- **VIDEO: Dr Kent Hovind ‘The False Gap Theory About Genesis 1:1-2’**

www.youtube.com/watch?v=rDiB3ybBb5E&feature=youtu.be

THE EXODUS FROM EGYPT

- **VIDEO: Patterns of Evidence: The Exodus – Full Trailer**

www.youtube.com/watch?v=2assFIyLInE

(DVD available from patternsofevidence.com)

THE RED SEA MIRACLE - PART 1

- **VIDEO: Patterns of Evidence: The Red Sea Miracle Part 1 – Full Trailer**

www.youtube.com/watch?v=WoRe6usblA8

(DVD available from patternsofevidence.com)

THE MOSES CONTROVERSY

- **VIDEO: Patterns of Evidence: The Moses Controversy – Full Trailer**

www.youtube.com/watch?v=DTyd1QU5Cbk

(DVD available from patternsofevidence.com)

NOAH AND THE FLOOD

- **VIDEO: New Beginnings, A Brand-New AiG Short Film (17 min)**

www.youtube.com/watch?v=o9eXk-p2Cw

PERSUADED BY THE EVIDENCE (FOR CREATION), PART 1, VOLUME 1:

- **VIDEO: <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=e3OihbyVKB4>.**

ALIEN INTRUSION

- **Alien Intrusion**

alienintrusion.com (movie preview)

creation.com/journey-to-remember

PERSECUTED CHRISTIANS IN THE WORLD TODAY

- **Open Doors' World Watch Map**

This World Watch map shows the 50 most dangerous countries where multitudes of believers in Christ are being persecuted for their faith today.

www.opendoors.org.au/persecuted-christians/world-watch-list

“Then Jesus said to those Jews who believed Him, ‘If you abide in My word, you are My disciples indeed. And you shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.’” (John 8:31-32)